

HISTORIC RESOURCE STUDY

LYNDON B. JOHNSON NATIONAL HISTORICAL PARK

LYNDON B. JOHNSON AND THE HILL COUNTRY
1937-1963



EDWIN C. BEARSS
NATIONAL PARK SERVICE

PLEASE RETURN TO
TECHNICAL INFORMATION CENTER
DENVER SERVICE CENTER
NATIONAL PARK SERVICE

ON MICROFILM

Color Scans

7/3/2003



RESOURCE STUDY
LYNDON B. JOHNSON AND THE HILL COUNTRY
1937-1963

By
Edwin C. Bearss,
Chief Historian
National Park Service

Southwest Cultural Resources Center Professional Papers Number 3

Manuscript Prepared by:
Christina Romero, Secretary

Division of Conservation
Southwest Cultural Resources Center
National Park Service
U.S. Department of the Interior
Santa Fe, New Mexico 87501

1984



TABLE OF CONTENTS

List of Illustrations ix

Foreword & Acknowledgements xi

I: JOHNSON AS A MEMBER OF THE 75th-80th CONGRESSES 1

 A. Congressman Johnson Goes to Washington 1

 1. Lyndon Johnson Makes a Favorable Impression 1

 2. Death Takes a Wonderful Man 2

 B. The Tenth District Congressman "is of the Stripe We're Used to" 4

 1. Johnson Earns a Free Ride 4

 2. He Establishes a Record as an Activist 5

 3. Johnson Returns to Johnson City and Opens a Temporary Office 10

 C. The Struggle Between the Interventionists and Isolationists 11

 1. Europe Goes to War 11

 2. Johnson is Re-elected to the 77th Congress 11

 3. The German War Machine Sweeps Across Western Europe 12

 4. Johnson Supports Franklin Roosevelt's Bid for a Third Term 13

 D. Lyndon Johnson's 1941 Campaign for the Senate 15

 1. He Throws His Hat in the Ring 15

 2. The "Record-Courier" Endorses the Hometown Boy 17

 3. The Campaign's Kick-Off 18

 4. Johnson Sets a Mankilling Pace 19

 5. The Homefolks Campaign for Lyndon 20

 6. The Family Beats the Bushes 22

 7. Pappy O'Daniel Ekes Out a Victory 23

 8. The Defeated Candidate's Homecoming 24

 E. The War and Immediate Postwar Years 25

 1. Lyndon Johnson Keeps a Pledge and Goes to War 25

 2. Johnson Returns from the Southwest Pacific 29

 3. Johnson Returns to Washington for the 79th Congress 31

 4. The 1944 Primary and General Election 33

 5. LBJ Wins a Peacetime But Bitter Election 36

 6. Johnson Serves in the 80th Congress 39

II: LYNDON JOHNSON AS TEXAS' JUNIOR SENATOR 40

 A. Johnson Wins a Bitter Senatorial Campaign 40

 1. He Declares His Candidacy 40

 2. The First Campaign 41

3.	Johnson Runs Second	44
4.	The Second Campaign Brings a Change in Tactics	45
5.	The Family Works for Lyndon	46
6.	Lyndon Johnson Ekes Out a Victory	47
7.	Johnson Sweeps into Office	49
B.	Johnson's First Years as a Senator	49
1.	The Korean Conflict Gives Him an Opportunity	49
2.	Johnson Becomes the Democratic Whip	51
C.	The National Nominating Conventions Make Their Choices	54
D.	The September 1952 Flood	54

III:	SENATOR JOHNSON BECOMES THE SECOND MOST POWERFUL MAN IN WASHINGTON	57
A.	Johnson Becomes Minority Leader in the 83d Congress	57
B.	Death Claims A Family Friend--Judge Stubbs	58
C.	The Johnsons Spend Five Months at the Ranch	59
D.	LBJ is Returned to the Senate	60
1.	Johnson Annihilates Dougherty in the Primary	60
2.	The Johnsons Spend the Long 1954 Recess at Stonewall	60
3.	LBJ Steamrollers Carlos Watson	61
E.	Johnson Becomes Majority Leader in the 84th Congress	63
F.	The Majority Leader is a "Workaholic"	64
G.	Lyndon Johnson's Walk in the Shadow of Death	65
1.	He is Felled by a Heart Attack	65
2.	He Returns to the Ranch	66
3.	His Doctors Establish a Routine	67
4.	His Diet	68
5.	The Construction of the Pool and Cabana and Arthur Godfrey's Visit	68
6.	LBJ Regains His Strength and Enthusiasm	69
7.	Visitors Beat a Path to the Pedernales	69
a.	Senator Symington's Visit	69
b.	Governor Stevenson and Speaker Rayburn Spend a Night at the Ranch	70
c.	Johnson Takes Senator Kefauver Deer Hunting	70
d.	The Ranch Becomes a Magnet for Democratic Politicians	71
e.	A Powerful Republican Senator Spends Thanksgiving at the Ranch	72
8.	Johnson Re-enters the Ring	72
H.	Johnson Returns to Washington and Resumes His Duties as Majority Leader	72

I.	The 1956 Campaign and General Election	73
1.	The Texas Democrats Endorse Johnson as Their Favorite Son Candidate for the Presidency	73
2.	Johnson Stumps for Stevenson and Kefauver	75
J.	Johnson Serves the Senate Democrats as Majority Leader in the 85th Congress	77
1.	The Liberals Challenge Johnson's Leadership	77
2.	The Johnsons Spend Several Recesses at the Ranch	78
3.	Johnson's Vigorous Response to Sputniks I & II	79
4.	The Johnsons Participate in the Blanco County Centennial	80
5.	The Senator Loses His Mother	80
K.	1959--An Eventful Year	82
1.	Johnson is Pressed to Seek the Presidency But Keeps His Options Open	82
2.	Johnson Continues to Court the Homefolks	82
3.	The October 4, 1959, Flood	83
4.	A Hill Country Gala for President Lopez Mateos	84
5.	Johnson Accelerates His Campaigning	85
6.	The Age of Flight Comes to the Ranch	86
L.	The Democratic Party Nominates JFK and LBJ as its 1960 Standard Bearers	86
1.	LBJ Campaigns for His Party's Presidential Nomination	86
2.	Johnson Returns to Johnson City for a Commencement Address	87
3.	Johnson Wins the Endorsement of the Texas Democrats	88
4.	Johnson Declares His Candidacy	89
M.	The Kennedy-Johnson Campaign	89
1.	The Johnsons Return from Los Angeles to a Rousing Welcome	89
2.	Blanco County Gives Its Hero a Day	91
3.	Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson Hit the Campaign Trail	92
4.	The Nation's Voters Turn to Kennedy and Johnson	94
5.	The President-Elect Visits the Ranch	95
IV:	THE VICE PRESIDENTIAL YEARS: 1961-63	97
A.	Johnson Proves to be an Asset to the Administration	97
1.	He is Inaugurated as 39th Vice President	97
2.	A Tragedy-Marred Ranch Weekend	98

	3.	Johnson as a Goodwill Ambassador to the Third World	99
	4.	Chancellor Adenauer's April 16-17 Visit	99
B.	Two	Pakistanis Visit the Hill Country	101
	1.	A Fateful Trip to Southeast Asia	101
	2.	President Ayub Khan's Mid-July 1961 Visit	102
	3.	The Johnsons Meet a Camel Driver	104
C.	The	Johnsons Have Their Share of Grief	106
	1.	"Lyndon's a Good Man to Have Around in an Emergency"	106
	2.	Death Haunts the Christmas Holidays	106
D.	The	Second Vice Presidential Year	108
	1.	The Johnsons Make Major Improvements to the Ranch House	108
	2.	The Johnsons and the First Annual Peach Jamboree	108
	3.	A Busy Eight Hill Country Days	109
	4.	The Johnsons Entertain the OAS Ambassadors	110
	5.	The Mid-term Campaign and Election	112
	6.	Four Weeks of Mixing Relaxation and Business	112
E.	The	First Ten Months of 1963	115
	1.	Lyndon and Lady Bird Make Several Quick Ranch Trips	115
	2.	The Johnsons Entertain the Seppalas	116
	3.	The Easter Recess	117
	4.	United Nations Day on the Pedernales	118
	5.	LBJ Returns to Johnson City for a Commencement Address	119
	6.	The May 27 Storm	121
	7.	The Malecheks' Memorial Day Visit to the Washington Area	121
	8.	The Independence Day Recess	122
	9.	An Uncomfortable August Night Aboard the Cabin Cruiser	124
	10.	August Comings and Goings	124
	11.	LBJ Sees His Hereford Herd Win Many Blue Ribbons	126
	12.	The Johnsons Return from Scandanavia	127
	13.	Congressman Jack Brooks and the Johnsons Trade Hospitality	127
	14.	Business and Politics Dictate Two October Hill Country Visits	128
F.	Pres	ident Kennedy's Assassination	129
	1.	Johnson Returns to Texas for the Last Time as Vice President	129
	2.	The Johnsons Prepare for a Presidential Visit	129
	3.	Word of the Dallas Tragedy Reaches the Ranch	130

Notes: Chapter I 132
Notes: Chapter II 137
Notes: Chapter III 140
Notes: Chapter IV 146
Illustrations 152
Bibliography 176



LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

- Plate I Historical Base Map LBJ Ranch: Headquarters Tract, January-June 1973.
- Plate II President Franklin D. Roosevelt, Governor James Alfred, and Congressman Lyndon B. Johnson at Galveston.
- Plate III 1941 Campaign for the U.S. Senate, Johnson City Caravan, May 3, 1941.
- Plate IV 1941 Senate Campaign, San Marcos Kick-Off, May 3, 1941.
- Plate V Lt. Comdr. Lyndon B. Johnson at Port Morseby, New Guinea, Seven-Mile Airborne, June 9, 1942.
- Plate VI Lyndon B. Johnson and the Johnson City Windmill, 1948 Senate Campaign.
- Plate VII Christmas at the Ranch 1952, at the "Front Gate: Lady Bird, Laddie, Lucy, Lynda, and LBJ."
- Plate VIII Christmas at the Ranch 1952, Decorating the Tree.
- Plate IX Fredericksburg Joint Rotary-Lions Meeting, August 1953.
- Plate X Judge A.W. Moursund and LBJ "Anticipation" Getting Their Limit--Come Deer Season, November, 1954.
- Plate XI Recuperating from Heart Attack at the LBJ Ranch in Summer of 1955.
- Plate XII Governor Stevenson and Sam Rayburn confer with LBJ in September, 1955.
- Plate XIII LBJ's Poolside discussion with the Godfrey Party.
- Plate XIV Arthur Godfrey's October 1955 Visit, Luci and Arthur.
- Plate XV Senators Johnson and Kefauver get a buck.
- Plate XVI Christmas at the Ranch 1955, Lady Bird, Luci, LBJ, Lynda, and Laddie.
- Plate XVII Christmas 1955 at the Ranch, Family Group.
- Plate XVIII Christmas Dinner at the Ranch, December 25, 1955.
- Plate XIX Christmas at the Ranch, December, 1957, the Johnson Family.
- Plate XX President Lopez Mateos of Mexico with Former President Truman, Speaker Rayburn, and Majority Leader Johnson.

Plate XXI President-elect Kennedy and Vice President-elect Johnson confer in November, 1960.

Plate XXII President Adenauer's April 1961 visit.

Plate XXIII Chancellor Adenauer and LBJ pass through the barbecue line.

Plate XXIV President Ayub Khan of Pakistan and Vice President Johnson at the Ranch.

FOREWORD & ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This Resource Study, Lyndon B. Johnson and the Hill Country, 1937-1963, has been programmed and executed to provide management and interpretation with a continuation of my 1971 report that closed with the twenty-eight-year-old Texan's April 1937 election to the 75th Congress. As in my previous study, the focus is on Lyndon Johnson and his people and environment. To understand and appreciate the Johnson mystic, one must know the Hill Country: the two are inseparable. It has been my privilege to know both and it has been an experience that I will always treasure.

Lyndon Johnson, during these 26 years, advanced from the most junior member of the House of Representatives to be the most powerful man in the Senate. Nominated and elected Vice President in 1960, he became President of the United States on that tragic November day in 1963. All this time, but particularly after moving from Austin to the LBJ Ranch in the summer of 1952, he maintained and strengthened his Hill Country roots.

Many persons have assisted in the preparation of this report. First and foremost, I wish to express my thanks to Mrs. Lyndon B. Johnson, a gracious First Lady, who took a number of hours from her busy schedule to meet with me and discuss in detail the Texas White House, its grounds, furnishings, and significance. President and Mrs. Johnson's daughters--Mrs. Lynda Johnson Robb and Mrs. Luci Johnson Nugent--likewise shared their recollections of life at the Ranch.

Former Superintendent Alec Gould of LBJNHP, a long-time friend and associate, went out of his way to ensure the successful completion of this study. Besides the usual amenities extended, Superintendent Gould was an articulate participant in my oral history interviews with Mrs. Johnson.

Without the assistance of key staff members of the LBJNHP, this report would lack essential elements. Historian John Tiff welcomed me to his division, shared with me his knowledge, and the remarkably complete research facilities of the park library, and made available to me the services of three talented members of his team--Curator Elizabeth "Libby" Hulett, Historical Technician Konrad Kelley, and Interpretive Secretary Elizabeth Lindig. Curator Hulett, besides possessing the confidence of President Johnson's family and friends, is a treasure trove of knowledge of sources. Equally important is her willingness to share her talents. Technician Kelley, a master in the field of oral history, spent hours providing me with background information on people to be contacted in addition to being an active and constructive participant in the recorded interviews. Elizabeth Lindig, a cheerful and eager associate, arranged interviews and, after my return to the Washington area, expedited my telephone requests for additional information.

Former ranch foreman Dale Malechek and his wife, Park Technician Jewel, closely associated with the Johnsons and the LBJ Ranch since January 1962, were enthusiastic participants in the oral history program and provided valuable insights into life at the Ranch.

Lyndon Johnson's siblings--Sam Houston Johnson (deceased), Rebekah Johnson Bobbitt (deceased), and Lucia Johnson Alexander--shared their recollections of the family's Hill Country years. Ava Johnson Cox, a first cousin and contemporary of the President, recalled family friends and stories.

Particularly valuable were the contributions of the local newspapers. Mrs. Stella Gliddon (deceased), long-time owner-editor of the Johnson City Record-Courier, invited me into her office and permitted me to study the back issues of her newspaper. She, having known Lyndon since he was a lad, shared her reminiscences. Equally vital was the cooperation shown by Arthur and Elise Kowert, owner-editors of the Fredericksburg Standard. They opened their newspaper's morgue and provided a congenial work area, where I spent several valuable weeks.

Archivists Bob Tissing and Tina Lawson of the Lyndon B. Johnson Library went out of their way to ensure that my limited time at this outstanding research facility was rewarding.

The photographs that give this report a special dimension were selected by Historian Tiff and Curator Hulett in cooperation with Philip Scott of the library staff.

Finally, I wish to express my appreciation to several colleagues whose talents were necessary to the successful completion of this study. The draft manuscript was read by these capable and well informed professionals of our Southwest Regional Office--Chief, Cultural Resources Center, Dr. Richard Sellars, Regional Historian Melody Webb, and Regional Historical Architect Dave Battle--and by Historian John Tiff and Curator Libby Hulett at LBJNHS. Valuable suggestions were forthcoming from these people and were incorporated in the report before it was final typed and reproduced, preparatory for distribution. A special thanks and kudos is reserved for Christina Romero, who had the task of turning my scrawl into a typed manuscript.

I. JOHNSON AS A MEMBER OF THE 75th--80th CONGRESSES

A. Congressman Johnson Goes to Washington

1. Lyndon Johnson Makes a Favorable Impression

Lyndon B. Johnson's ringing endorsement of President Franklin D. Roosevelt's campaign to pack the Supreme Court made his special election victory front page news throughout the Nation. Meanwhile, the President had announced plans for a cruise in the Gulf of Mexico, and a return to Washington by train. After learning of Johnson's election to the vacant Tenth District seat, Roosevelt called Texas Governor James V. Alford, asking that the young congressman-elect be introduced to him.

Johnson, having recovered sufficiently from his appendectomy, joined Governor Alford's party at Galveston on May 11, 1937. There they boarded the presidential yacht Potomac. Johnson wore an orchid in his lapel as he bounded up the gangway. This was the beginning of a fruitful friendship, which continued until Roosevelt's death eight years later. When the President started back to Washington, he asked the tall Texas to accompany him part of the way. When Lyndon was preparing to detrain at Texarkana, President Roosevelt shook his hand, gave him a Washington telephone number, and "asked him to use it when he came to be sworn into the House of Representatives." The number proved to be that of Thomas Corcoran, "Tommy the Cork," a member of the President's inner circle.¹

Congressman-elect Johnson made his first visit to Johnson City, following the election, on Saturday, April 24. He was accompanied by Lady Bird, his private secretary, and his nurse, Miss Lula Stribling. Johnson and his party spent the night with his parents, and while there, he received "short calls from many of his friends," who were solicitous of their young congressman's health. They were delighted to see that Johnson was recuperating "nicely," but he admitted he was still weak, and it would be several weeks before he could take up his new duties. Sam and Rebekah Johnson accompanied their son and daughter-in-law when they returned to Austin on Sunday night.²

On Tuesday morning, April 27, Sam and Rebekah Johnson drove their son and Lady Bird to the depot, and bid them a fond farewell. Two weeks later, on May 13, 1937, Lyndon Baines Johnson took his oath of office and seat in the 1st Session of the 75th Congress. He was given a choice assignment to the House Naval Affairs Committee, chaired by powerful Georgia Congressman Carl Vinson. "It was a plum" for a House freshman,³ given him at Roosevelt's request.

Representative Johnson soon called on his younger brother, Sam Houston, to help out in his Washington office. Sam occupied a room in the Johnsons' modest house at 1910 Kalorama Road, NW.⁴ Previously, Lyndon's oldest sister, Rebekah, a graduate of Southwest Texas State College, had secured employment in Washington. Her brother, while serving as Representative Richard Kleberg's secretary, had presented a petition in her behalf signed by the entire Texas congressional delegation to the Librarian of Congress. Cognizant of Miss Johnson's credentials, the Librarian gave her a position in the Library's Copyright Office, where she worked for the next seven and one-half years.⁵

Lyndon Johnson learned fast and received his schooling on how to be a successful congressman from

such canny, patient mentors as Vice President John N. Garner, Democratic Whip Sam Rayburn, and their veteran colleagues. They took their new Texas associate into the quiet, late afternoon meetings where strategy was planned, where the various ways of persuading fellow Congressmen were discussed and where occasionally Mr. Garner would lead in "striking a blow for liberty"--his term for having a drink of whiskey.

At these convivial gatherings Freshman Congressman Johnson "saw patience demonstrated and canny planning in practice." The powerful Texas Congressional Delegation, although possessing divergent views as to certain aspects of Franklin D. Roosevelt's New Deal, worked as a "team on nearly all matters affecting their state." Johnson had been cognizant of this during the years he had served Fourteenth District Representative Richard Kleberg as his secretary. Now he was part of the action, "and it fit him like a glove."

Lyndon Johnson required few, if any, lessons on how to broaden and strengthen his political base and standing with his Tenth District constituents. He ordered all letters to be answered by his staff on the day of their receipt, if feasible, and they would be replied to promptly no matter their request or content. He thus kept a firm hand on the pulse of the voters. He encountered no difficulty in maintaining the flow of federal funds into the district. He made certain that the Colorado River dams and reclamation projects inaugurated by his predecessor were continued. Soil conservation projects and farm credit programs, including the first legislation aimed at helping black farmers, earned Representative Johnson's enthusiastic support. Johnson voted for the Tenth District farmers and against President Roosevelt and Democratic Whip Sam Rayburn on a test involving continuation of low-cost loans to farmers.⁶

2. Death Takes a Wonderful Man

In the fourth week of September 1937, five months after he saw his son elected to Congress, Sam Johnson suffered another heart attack. He was rushed from his Johnson City home to Austin's Brackenridge Hospital in a "critical condition." When he arrived at the hospital he was semi-conscious.

By the time the Record-Courier went to press on the 30th, Sam Johnson's condition had seemingly improved, and Editor R. T. Gliddon informed his subscribers that Mr. Sam had rallied and was "gaining in strength, which encourages hope that he will soon be on the road to recovery and will again enjoy his usual good health."

The 1st Session of the 75th Congress having adjourned on August 21, Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson had returned to Texas and were again living in their Austin apartment. By the end of the second week of October, Mr. Johnson had recovered sufficiently to be discharged and taken to his son's apartment. While there, he told Lyndon of his desire to accompany him back to Washington to be present when the 2nd Session of the 75th Congress convened.

During the third week of October, Mr. Johnson suffered a relapse, and on the 21st it was announced that he was "slowly sinking and little hope is held out for a turn of the better." Friends calling on Mr. Sam returned to Johnson City to report that the attending physician had told them that the end was only "a question of hours or a few days."

Meanwhile, President Roosevelt had decided to call a special session of the 75th Congress to secure passage of a minimum wage and hour law. It was announced that on Saturday, the 23rd, the President would carry his case to the people in a fireside chat. Father and son listened to the talk. After it was over, Mr. Johnson told Lyndon that he would not be going to Washington. Calling him to his bedside, Mr. Sam shook his son's hand, expressed support and admiration for Roosevelt's program, and said, "Give them hell!" and died.

This was a traumatic experience for the son. Never before had he been an eyewitness to the death of a loved one. Dr. John F. Barnwell, the family physician, was present. He stepped to the side of the bed, checked for a pulse, and pronounced Mr. Johnson dead. He then placed a towel under the deceased's chin and tied it behind his bald head.

News of Mr. Johnson's death, although expected, saddened his many Hill Country friends. Editor Gliddon of the Local-Record spoke for the community, in mourning the passing of a man whom he characterized as "an outstanding political leader in his home county" and region. During his "long and useful career" no man "in this section of Texas" had done more for deserving "men and women . . . who came to him for assistance in procuring pensions and other favors. No deserving friend ever went to Mr. Johnson for a favor that it was not granted if in his power to do so. As a civic leader in his hometown, his wise council" would be impossible to replace.

Mr. Johnson, Editor Gliddon eulogized, was widely known "because of his progressive liberal stand on all matters of state legislation." He had been an "uncompromising champion" of the doctrine of democratic liberty, as it applied to all classes of people. "He was famous for his speech on tolerance delivered on the floor" of the Texas House of Representatives in World War I, "in which he insisted upon that type of patriotism which is tempered with common sense and justice and does not jeopardize those unfortunate enough to be caught within the tentacles of circumstances."

He had been an "ardent supporter of labor reform laws for Texas," and much that was "modern, vital and living in the Texas statutes on labor" had resulted from his "untiring efforts and his high principles."¹⁰

Services for the deceased were held on Sunday afternoon, October 24, at the First Christian Church in Johnson City, with the Rev. James H. Clark and family friend Judge Nat Stubbs officiating. Among the hundreds in attendance, in addition to the family, were Governor James V. Allred, Mayor Tom Miller of Austin, and Lon A. Smith of the State Railroad Commission. From Johnson City, the body was taken to Stonewall by the Ross Funeral Home for burial in the family cemetery. There, final rites were conducted by the Rev. J. O. Tanner of Pettus and Commissioner Smith.¹¹

Describing the last rites, the Record-Courier reported:

The body of Mr. Johnson now rests beneath the oaks of the family cemetery. It was near this place that Mr. Johnson spent some of the happiest, as well as the most useful days of his career. Several hundred people were there to grieve with those who mourned the passing of their friend to the great beyond. Our friend, "Sam" Johnson, is no more in this world of strife and toil, but his kindly deeds, his noble traits of character, will serve to brighten the way for others, who were near and dear to him.¹²

Rebekah Baines Johnson found it "hard to believe that the brilliant mind, the dynamic personality, the great and loving heart of Sam Johnson was forever stilled." After more than 30 years of a happy and fruitful marriage, she was compelled to make many readjustments. "Once there was never time enough to do all" she "wanted to do." Now she had to "devise plans to prevent" her slipping into the 'stark sloth and arrant ease' of old age." She turned her attention to compiling a family genealogy and collecting American pressed glass.

Mrs. Johnson decided to move to Austin and to rent her Johnson City home. The house on Block No. 25, in the late autumn of 1937, was rented to J. Frank Kendall, the first of a succession of tenants. In her Austin home, besides her genealogy and glass collection, she had her "books so beloved through all my day now more needed than ever before." She also had her children and, as the years passed, grandchildren.¹³

B. The Tenth District Congressman "is of the Stripe We're Used to"

1. Johnson Earns a Free Ride

The 29 year old Congressman's diligence and hard work was reciprocated by the Hill Country people. In March 1938 Editor Gliddon of the Record-Courier informed his Blanco County readers that a year ago, when Lyndon B. Johnson was in "the midst of a heated campaign with seven aspirants" to fill the unexpired term of Representative James P. Buchanan, he had forecast his election. This prediction had been based upon "the fact

that we perviously knew the young candidate, and had followed his lifework, from the time he attended a county school as a barefoot boy."

Johnson, Editor Gliddon continued, was a hard worker and "a man of exceptional good judgement in all his undertakings." This had been borne out by the success he had enjoyed since reaching manhood.

A self-made man, he had distinguished himself in the short time that he had been in Congress by looking after the interests of his constituents.

The editor was certain that no Tenth District man or woman was better suited to represent the area than Lyndon B. Johnson. Although no candidates had yet filed to run against the young Congressman, anyone contemplating such a race would do well to "remember that Johnson is growing in popularity everyday, and that it would be a much easier manner for him to defeat one or two men than it was seven men ten months ago." Surely he "will not have an opponent this year after the brilliant record he has made as" a freshman on Capitol Hill.¹⁴

No Democratic opposition developed, and Lyndon Johnson was assured re-election to the 76th Congress.

2. He Establishes a Record as an Activist

Lyndon Johnson took the lead under the Rural Electrification Administration (REA) Act of 1935 in assisting Hill Country farmers and ranchers to form cooperatives and to bring electric power to their homes and outbuildings. He was "no theorist on electric energy for rural residents," but he recalled "his years of toil on the business end of a well pump, on the hand-powered clippers that sheared goats and sheep, on milking cows by hand." He also remembered cleaning and filling kerosene and Coleman lamps, and the "dim light they gave for reading and writing."

Those opposed to the REA program insisted that the country people would refuse to lay out hard earned dollars for electric energy, that they would hold stubbornly to the ways of their parents and grandparents, thus saving their money. Lyndon Johnson did not agree. "He had a standing offer to buy any man a Stetson . . . who found a farmer or rancher refusing to pay the price of bringing electricity to his place. Nobody ever claimed the hat."¹⁵

Consequently, in the summer of 1938 Lyndon Johnson, during the congressional recess, spent several weeks in the Hill Country working hard to expedite organization of the Pedernales Electric Cooperative, Inc. (PEC). On Wednesday afternoon, July 20, Johnson drove out to the old hometown from Austin. As he walked about Johnson City, he shook hands and was given a warm greeting by his boyhood friends. It was not entirely a pleasure trip. During the afternoon he met with civic leaders "to discuss matters of vital importance" to the community. That evening Johnson talked with the directors and county agents of the area to be encompassed by PEC, and pledged them continued support. Johnson told the agents that their assistance assured the success of PEC. Moreover, he continued, with the cooperation of the people, PEC would not only be the largest REA project in

central Texas but in the entire state, and possibly the Nation. The county agents, he was proud to announce, although much of their energy was engrossed with the AAA and Extension Service, had found time to champion PEC.

The agents, on checking their files, were able to report that there were 1,442 paid memberships. They were told to remind their constituents that the deadline for signing up was July 30, and that by mid-August crews were to begin stringing power lines.¹⁶

After the meeting, Johnson promised Blanco County Agent Ross B. Jenkins to accompany him to Blanco to speak on behalf of the project on Monday afternoon, the 25th, and would return to Johnson City for an evening rally at the courthouse. The dynamic young Congressman urged the men to bring their women and that everybody be present for these meetings. He then returned to Austin for the night.

Commenting on Johnson's visit, the Record-Courier observed, "Our congressman is very much interested in seeing that our rural population be supplied with electric current at as low rate as possible."¹⁷

Representative Johnson returned to Blanco County as scheduled and, in speeches at Blanco and Johnson City on Monday, addressed an estimated 500 constituents. After discussing why everyone should become a member of PEC, he warned that Saturday night (July 30) was the "end of the time authorized by REA officials for application for membership which would determine where the distribution lines are to be run."

Next, Johnson reminded his listeners that "the general floods now rampaging central Texas are soon to be harnessed with the production of electric current" upon completion of the four dams now under construction. He warned the people that if they failed to sign up, he feared they "would be everlastingly sorry when they saw the well equipped homes of neighbors who had."

Lyndon Johnson criticized the power companies and special interest groups who "through court action and other legal delays" had slowed construction of the Colorado dams, thereby adding to the damage wreaked by floodwaters. If there had been no delays, the dams would have been able to impound the waters that had caused an estimated two-to three-million dollars damage.

Turning to rates, he pointed out that in Johnson City, even at the "new low rates" advertised by Texas Power & Light Company, you have to pay 15¢ per kilowatt hour for the first ten hours of service; 9¢ for the next 40 kilowatt hours; 3.7¢ for the second 40 kilowatt hours; and 2¢ for each additional kilowatt hour. Studies by the Tennessee Valley Authority (TVA), Johnson continued, had shown that electricity could be supplied to Johnson City and Blanco people at a rate "that would have saved more than \$3,000 per town on the basis of consumption, or that 3¢ per kilowatt hour is adequate to repay the company for power, maintenance, and entire indebtedness against the line in 20 years."¹⁸

Congressman Johnson returned to the Nation's capital on Tuesday, September 27, for an important meeting with John M. Carmody, administrator of REA. When he emerged from Carmody's office, Johnson informed the press that the administrator had allotted \$1,332,000 to construct 1,718 miles of power lines in the ten central Texas counties to be served by PEC. According to him this was the largest single allotment yet made by REA.

This project, which was dear to Johnson's heart, would bring the benefits of cheap energy to be generated by the Lower Colorado River Authority to rural areas in Blanco, Burnet, Caldwell, Travis, Williamson, Hays, Gillespie, Mason, Kendall, and Kerr counties. Construction would begin within 60 days, with PEC utilizing cheap public power purchased from the Lower Colorado River Authority to serve 4,000 farm families which had no electricity.¹⁹

Tenth District voters were assured by their Congressman that they were about to realize a long standing dream. They had known that there was "no reason a great natural resource, developed by our people on the Colorado River cheap public power should not bestow its benefits" on rural America, as well as the city dwellers. No longer would it be mere talk for farm women, to whom electricity had long been a far away utility. Within a few months they could lay aside their "corrugated washboards and let their red hot cook stoves cool off, while they iron on a hot April afternoon."

Farmers who had been drawing water from a well with a bucket all their lives could now get themselves an electric pump to do the work. Better yet, they would now have power they could afford.²⁰

In the autumn of 1938 Congressman Johnson used his persuasive powers to insure that the \$40,000 district headquarters for PEC was located in Johnson City, and that federal funds were allocated for erection of a new home economics building at the local school. Calling attention to these construction projects in May 1939, Editor Gliddon of the Record Courier inquired, "Did you ever take the time to think just what is happening in and around the old home town?" Answering his question, he pointed out that Johnson City was forging ahead in a "commercial way." More than a dozen new buildings had been erected during the past several months, and construction of others was anticipated.²¹

The man responsible for the economic boom, Gliddon reminded his readers, was Congressman Johnson. His hard work had resulted in locating the two buildings, which had sparked the growth in the building trades, in Johnson City. When the PEC building is completed, "it would mean that quite a few more people will make their permanent home in Johnson City." As Editor Gliddon saw it, there was "need for one or more public buildings in our city, and while Lyndon Johnson is on the job it would be wise for us to take advantage of his willingness to help us."²²

Johnson was not parochial. Every county in the Tenth District had received "his careful considerable influence in the distribution of governmental favors." Although he had been a member of Congress for only 25 months, "he had done more for the people than any previous congressman"

had in twenty years," Gliddon waxed. As soon as the PEC building was finished, he suggested that we have "a Congressman Johnson Day in Johnson City to fittingly observe the outstanding accomplishments of this matchless young congressman . . . of whom we are all justly proud on account of those great achievement for his home people."²³

In mid-May, 1939, the Record-Courier carried a feature story extolling the accomplishments of Congressman Johnson. His constituents recalled that he had formulated a dynamic program to insure "steady and unbroken" progress for the Tenth District. This program was to be founded on a "sound agricultural economy, strong support for labor, business and industrial interests, and permanent [public] improvements." Following his election, Johnson had "converted" his program into a "creed for uninterrupted action."

Johnson's record in the 75th and 76th Congresses had been distinguished by his "insistance upon solvency for the farmers." The youthful Congressman had insisted "the time will come when the farmer may grow and market products and obtain a living" from the land for his family, education for his children, liquidation of his debts, and a margin for a rainy day. To accomplish this, he had supported the AAA, although "disagreeing openly with many of its features." He had told the voters that "it was only a step in the right direction, but we ought to take that step and make plans for others."

Johnson had supported a continuation of low interest rates on farm mortgages, soil conservation measures, the conservation of natural resources, the tenant-purchase program, research to discover new uses for farm products, electric energy for farm homes, institution in 1940 of price adjustment payments, and any other measure directed "at a better understanding of world market conditions."

He had championed the Lower Colorado River development program inaugurated by his predecessor. He believed that this project, besides providing work for the unemployed, had benefitted the region through flood control, conservation, and as a source of cheap public power, while the reservoirs impounded behind the dams were being developed into outstanding recreational areas. The latter, Johnson forecast, would become a lucrative new industry that would be a boom to the regional economy.

In every district county, projects ranging from construction of post offices and courthouses, National Youth Administration (NYA) and Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC) projects, to sewing rooms, had been funded to provide employment for as many as possible.

Through Johnson's efforts a Federal Housing Authority (FHA) office had been established in Austin and several slum-clearing and low-income housing projects, the first in the Nation, were underway in that city.

In Washington, Johnson, as an active member of the House Naval Affairs Committee, had won for himself a "national reputation" as the United States embarked on a vast naval expansion program directed toward creation of a two-ocean Navy.

An "old timer" had been heard to remark, "Our present Congressman is of the stripe we're used to."

When asked what he meant, he explained, that when John D. Sayers had been elected to Congress in 1884, he had been a voter, as he had when they "steped" Sayers up to governor in 1899, "where he'd done a big job well." Albert S. Burleson had succeeded Sayers as Tenth District congressman, and had held that office until 1913 when he was named Postmaster General by President Woodrow Wilson. James P. Buchanan had been elected to succeed Burleson. The "old timer" had seen "Uncle Buck go to the top" of the House Appropriations Committee, and, he continued, we then put Lyndon Johnson in at

27 and if he continues to do as good job as he started, in a district that gives a man like him every opportunity because it won't tie him down with political entanglements, by the time he's middle aged we can expect him to have been there long enough to have a big chairmanship, or maybe be the speakership.

We're used to getting big things done, and for ^{two} years this young fellow has been doing bigger things.²⁴

In August 1939 President Roosevelt, having followed Johnson's career closely and cognizant of his interest in public power, offered him the position of Administrator of REA to replace John M. Carmody.

Lyndon Johnson, in declining the appointment, wrote the President, "My job now is a contract with the people of the Tenth District of Texas which I hope to complete satisfactorily and to renew every two years as long as I appear useful."²⁵

Roosevelt replied:

I am very sorry you did not feel you wanted to accept the proffer of the Administrator of REA, but I do think I ought to tell you that very rarely have I known a proposed candidate for any position to receive such unanimous recommendations from all sources as was the case with you. But I understand why you felt that you should stay as a representative of your district. I congratulate the Tenth District of Texas.²⁶

Tenth District friends of the young Congressman were "elated" to learn of the President's interest in him, but were delighted to learn that he would continue to serve them on Capitol Hill. Typical was the reaction of the Record-Courier which announced, "There is no question that Lyndon B. Johnson has the solid backing of the people and we are particularly delighted that he will remain in the position where he will be of the greatest benefit to those who elected him Congressman."²⁷

3. Johnson Returns to Johnson City and Opens a Temporary Office

On August 5, 1939, the 1st Session of the 76th Congress adjourned. Whereupon, Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson returned to Texas, taking up residence in their Austin apartment. On Sunday afternoon, November 12, an informal reception was held at the newly opened PEC building honoring them. In the receiving line were Mr. Lee McWilliams, Mr. and Mrs. L. W. Chick and their daughter Mrs. Love, and Mr. and Mrs. Hugo Weinheimer. While waiting for all the guests to arrive, there was a short program, with entertainment by local talent.

After the last guest had arrived, Mr. McWilliams, local manager of PEC, introduced and welcomed Congressman and Mrs. Johnson, presenting Lady Bird with a beautiful bouquet. Next, he asked the Congressman's secretaries Herbert Henderson and John Connally and other outoftowners to stand. Brief talks were then made by Johnson, his two secretaries, and NYA Supervisor W. O. Alexander of Houston. Refreshments and cake were then served.²⁸

Before returning to Austin for the night, Johnson announced that he was establishing and would maintain an office in the PEC building during the congressional recess. Constituents and friends with problems were invited to drop in. Manning the office were John Connally, Herbert Henderson, and Walter Jenkins.²⁹

John Connally had recently joined the Johnson team as chief administrative assistant. The previous year, Johnson had received a letter from an old friend Sam Fore, the editor of the Floresville Chronicle Journal. Fore wrote in behalf of a talented Floresville youth, John Connally. He asked Johnson to intervene to help Connally get a job so he could finish his studies at the University of Texas.

As Miss Mary Rather, who was destined to spend many years on the Johnson team, recalled, she was working for Senator Alvin Wirtz at this time. Johnson asked Wirtz to contact Connally, and Wirtz in turn gave the task to Miss Rather. John, however, was involved in so many campus activities that it took her three days to run him down. Before doing so, she had commenced to wonder if there was such a person. When Connally came in for an interview, Wirtz was impressed with his ability, and recommended to Johnson that he be hired.

Congressman Johnson arranged for Connally to get a job with the National Youth Administration in Austin. Connally, besides promptly earning his degree, proved his political talents by winning election as president of the student body in his senior year, and then becoming a member of Johnson's congressional staff.

Although four decades have passed, a number of Johnson City residents still recall the first visit of their young Congressman's handsome young administrative assistant to Johnson City,³⁰

In the last week of November, Mr. and Mrs. Johnson and Ellsworth Clark, an REA attorney from Washington, stopped in at a meeting of the Pleasant Hill-Rocky Agricultural Association. Congressman Johnson made one of his informal "fireside" talks to the members. They were told that there were 15,000 rural homes in the district that were without electrical service. But, he continued, with the advent of PEC at least 7,000 of these by next Christmas will be electrified. And it would not be too long, he trusted, before the remaining 8,000 were served.³¹

C. The Struggle Between the Interventionists and Isolationists

1. Europe Goes to War

On September 1, 1939, Adolf Hitler ceased the saber rattling, which since his rise to power in January 1933, had enabled him to redress the injustices of the Treaty of Versailles, effect an Anschluss with Austria, destroy collective security as championed by the League of Nations, and compel Great Britain and France to appease his demands at Munich by abandoning Czechoslovakia. The word blitzkrieg, in all its terrifying connotations, was introduced to the day-to-day vocabulary, as the German Wehrmacht and Luftwaffe shattered the Polish armed forces and, with the cooperation of the Soviet Russia, Poland was partitioned. Hitler, however, had miscalculated, and, on September 3, Britain and France declared war on Nazi Germany. World War II had begun.

In the United States, although the great majority of the people were sympathetic to the cause of the Allies, the Nation was determined to remain aloof from the struggle. President Roosevelt, in asking for and securing a revision in the neutrality laws to permit the sale of munitions and war materiel to belligerents on a cash-and-carry basis, promised that no American boys would be sent abroad to fight in a foreign war.

With the world again at war, Congressman Johnson found more and more of his time engrossed by his assignment to the House Naval Affairs Committee. Twice during the six-week congressional recess, Johnson was called back to Washington by urgent national business. Because of the time factor he traveled by air. Many days were also spent visiting in the other nine Tenth District counties. Other days were spent answering "stacks of mail" which flowed over his desk in the PEC building. Large numbers of individuals and delegations from³² far and wide had flocked through the doors to chat with their congressman.

2. Johnson is Re-elected to the 77th Congress

On January 3, 1940, Lyndon Johnson was at his desk, when Speaker William B. Bankhead convened the 2nd Session of the 76th Congress. Not long thereafter, the new editor (R. T. Gliddon had died on January 4, and was succeeded as editor by his wife, the dynamic Stella Klaerner Gliddon.) of the Record-Courier informed her readers that "for a few weeks this winter a six-foot, dark-eyed young Texan was seen hanging about the streets of Johnson City. He had been over these streets years before, in his grade and high school days, and the rush he manifested in his boyhood was repeated." This man was Lyndon B. Johnson, and he still called Johnson City home.

Johnson, Editor Gliddon continued, had "helped obtain millions of dollars in federal aid for his district. First, because he insisted central Texas must have adequate flood control, conservation of natural resources, reclamation, cheap public power, and recreation facilities." All economic classes had benefitted from his support of the Lower Colorado River Authority. In the 16 central Texas counties where "all electric facilities had been taken over by the Colorado River Authority," sharp reductions had been effected in power rates. PEC was supplying 5,000 homes, which had never known electric lights, electric irons and stoves, pumps, etc.

He was also an advocate of public housing, with the twofold goal of making it possible for renters to become homeowners and to provide labor with jobs in the construction industry.

He had fought "long and hard" for a program to revitalize central Texas farms and ranches. Capstones of this program was his struggle for low interest rates, seasonal loans, disaster and drought loans, loans to abate the tenant problem, soil conservation and reclamation, parity payments to protect families buying in a protected market and selling in a world market, equitable freight rates, etc.

Johnson had supported the Public Works Administration (PWA) to make possible construction of needed schools and public buildings, and a "full and adequate" Works Progress Administration (WPA) to assist those unable to find work until such time as they were absorbed by the labor market. He had backed the National Youth Administration (NYA) and the Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC). It had been a fundamental belief with him since the days he had worked his way through Southwest Texas State College that "every boy and girl who needed and wanted an education or a job should be helped." More than 20,000 Texas boys and girls were being assisted through high school and college each year with jobs by NYA, the organization he had directed from 1935 until 1937. The PEC building had been built with NYA funds.

"An impetuous driving, dynamic person," Johnson was the "heart of patience in every battle, in every complexity which arises. Unrelenting in purpose, he is yet wholly reasonable and full of understanding for those unable to keep his terrific pace." One of his friends reported, "It's like trying to hold the wires of a dynamo."³³

In view of this record and grass roots support, it was no surprise when no candidates surfaced to challenge Johnson in either the Democratic primary in July or the general election. On November 5, 1940, Lyndon Johnson was re-elected by Tenth District voters to represent them in the 77th Congress.³⁴

3. The German War Machine Sweeps Across Western Europe

Meanwhile, both Lyndon Johnson and the Nation were being forced to focus more and more energy and attention on foreign affairs and national defense rather than economic recovery. In Europe, the "phoney war" which had gripped much of the continent since the destruction of Poland, was

shattered when Germany, in early April 1940, seized Denmark and invaded Norway. British Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain boldly declared that Hitler had "missed the bus." But the British were wrong. By employing their superior airpower, the Germans were able to neutralize the Royal Navy in the coastal waters and compel the Allies to evacuate the troops rushed to the support of the Norwegian government.

Worse was to come. On May 10 Hitler's war machine struck in the west. Luxembourg was occupied, and the Netherlands and Belgium invaded. The French Army, believed by many Americans to be superior to the Wehrmacht, began to crumble. Smashing the French Ninth Army at Sedan, Hitler's panzer divisions, in an operation dubbed Sichelschnitt, raced across northern France. The English Channel was reached at Abbeville and the British Expeditionary Force, two French armies, and the Belgium Army isolated. The Dunkirk miracle momentarily bolstered Allied hopes.

On June 5 the German, having redeployed their armies, assailed the French forces guarding their nation's heartland. Massive breakthroughs were made, and the panzers sped through the French countryside. Benito Mussolini, to capitalize on Hitler's successes and to secure a seat for Italy at the victor's table, on June 10, declared war on prostrate France and all but isolated Britain. Within two weeks, the French government had signed an armistice with the German leaders at Compiègne, and France was out of the war. Great Britain now stood alone against the Axis aggressors.

In the Far East, Japan, although deeply involved in a war with China since July 1937, moved to capitalize on this situation. The French were pressured by the Japanese military to permit them to establish bases in Indo-China and stop the flow of supplies into China over the railroads running north from Hanoi.

4. Johnson Supports Franklin Roosevelt's Bid for a Third Term

While the Americans followed these awesome events on their radios and in their newspapers and anxiously awaited the battle of Britain's outcome, the Democratic and Republican parties prepared to hold their National Nominating Conventions. Lyndon Johnson's free ride for re-election gave him an opportunity to participate actively in the maneuvering that resulted in selection of Texas' delegation to the Democratic National Convention. Texas Democratic leadership divided on the question of whether to support Franklin D. Roosevelt for an unprecedented third term. The Texas congressional delegation split over the same question. The question to be settled in Texas was whether the state's delegation would travel to Chicago instructed to "stop Roosevelt." Pro-Roosevelt forces argued that the Axis victories and international situation demanded that Roosevelt be renominated and re-elected. The opposition, led by Vice President John Garner and Whip Sam Rayburn, revered the two-term tradition, and, refusing to believe that any man was indispensable, could not support a third-term. An articulate third-termer, Lyndon Johnson took the lead in fashioning a compromise upon which the state convention could agree: "Send the delegation to Chicago pledged to support John Nance Garner for President, but instructed not to take part in any stopRoosevelt bloc that might form."

Roosevelt was renominated at Chicago on July 17, and with Garner stepping aside Secretary of Agriculture Henry A. Wallace of Iowa was chosen as the Democratic Party's Vice Presidential standard bearer. Meeting in Philadelphia, the Republicans, at an exciting convention, selected dark horse Wendell L. Wilkie of Indiana as their Presidential candidate. His running mate was Charles L. McNary of Oregon.

In the months following the Chicago convention, the Democratic party leadership had a special assignment for Lyndon Johnson. Two years before, the Republicans had scored a number of successes in the congressional elections. If this trend continued more losses would occur and the Democratic majorities in the Senate and House would be threatened. At the request of his friends in the House, and with FDR's blessing, Johnson took on the task of allotting funds and party workers to key congressional districts in an effort to combat a continued Republican surge. One of Johnson's first steps was to get U.S. Representative Arthur K. Mitchell, a Chicago black, named to an important campaign subcommittee. The Virginia state chairman was dismayed and protested Johnson's action in pushing Mitchell to the forefront. Johnson also made a \$25 personal campaign contribution to aid Mitchell's fight for re-election. This action by a southern politician and grandson of a Confederate cavalryman baffled many people.³⁵

Lyndon Johnson's "vantage point as a White House favorite, and his widening acquaintance in the Democratic Party leadership ranks, gave him opportunities to work beyond the immediate concerns of his own district." The 1940 campaign placed him on the road to leadership of his party and Nation.

During the hotly contested campaign, Johnson's "work consisted principally of hanging onto a battery of telephones, checking the situation in the embattled districts, sending money and ideas, and phoning key Democrats advice about strategy and tactics "where required or requested. More than \$100,000 in campaign funds were disbursed, along with "an untold amount of advice and exhortation."

On November 5, 1940, the Nation's voters trooped to the polls. Franklin Roosevelt was elected to a third term by a whopping electoral vote, while in the House the Democrats gained seven seats and in the Senate lost three. Bolstered by this mandate, Roosevelt, in the weeks and months following the convening of the 1st Session of the 77th Congress, found most of his time and energy engrossed by measures for the national defense, and extension of all aid short of war to forces fighting Axis aggression. As an influential member of Congress and of the House Naval Affairs Committee, Lyndon Johnson sat in on many White House strategy sessions seeking answers to the arguments³⁶ of the isolationist leaders, who challenged the President's foreign policy.

Johnson was at the White House in January 1941, when United States Ambassador to Great Britain Joseph P. Kennedy telephoned to say that he had just returned from London and had arrived in Washington. President Roosevelt told Johnson to wait, while he took the call. FDR and Ambassador Kennedy had a pleasant conversation, and before hanging up he invited Kennedy to the White House for breakfast. Resuming his discussion

with Johnson, Roosevelt turned his ire on Kennedy, denouncing him in the strongest terms, stating that he had been duped by Nazi Germany, Roosevelt then told Johnson that he was going to name a new ambassador.³⁷

D. Lyndon Johnson's 1941 Campaign for the Senate

1. He Throws His Hat in the Ring

On April 9, 1941, Senator Morris Sheppard of Texas died. This left a vacancy which President Roosevelt and Lyndon Johnson promptly sought to exploit. Abroad the British, in the late summer and early autumn of 1940, had won the battle of Britain and were now grimly holding firm against the blitz. Mussolini had failed to find his glory, as his invasions of Egypt and Greece misfired. The dispatch of a British army to Greece compelled Hitler to turn briefly to the Balkans.

Several days before Senator Sheppard's fatal heart attack, the Wehrmacht and Luftwaffe struck into Yugoslavia and Greece in a devastating display of brute strength. The Yugoslav army was crushed in days and the government fled the country. The Greeks and their British allies were no more successful. On April 26 Nazi legions occupied Athens, King George and his government fled to Crete, and the British hurriedly evacuated their troops under the cover of darkness.

Meanwhile, on the home front in the United States there was little unity of purpose. There was labor strife in the coalfields, the aircraft factories, and shipyards. In the fumbling federal efforts to mobilize for defense and aid the Allies, there were difficulties and differences between the government in Washington and the men who managed and labored in key industries. A Selective Service Act had been passed in September 1940, but it was questionable whether there were sufficient votes in Congress to secure its extension.

Texas political leadership was divided, a legacy of the previous year's bitter third-term struggle. Although the state's electorate had carried the state by an impressive margin for Roosevelt, he had few, if any friends, in high state office in Austin. "Many Rooseveltians still held rank in the Democratic Party of Texas, but the official machinery of state government was manned by those who were either hostile or indifferent to the man in the White House." These people had been elected in 1938 and in 1940 by campaigns which placed scant emphasis on national and international affairs.

President Roosevelt and leaders of the intervention forces spoke out for providing the Allies with all assistance short of war. Isolationist leaders in the United States Senate spearheaded by Burton K. Wheeler of Montana and Arthur H. Vandenburg of Michigan and in the Nation by Colonel Charles A. Lindbergh, Robert E. Wood, and Robert R. McCormick led an equally vocal and determined campaign for non-intervention and to keep the United States out of a foreign war. The isolationist leadership in the Senate battled Roosevelt on many preparedness issues and all measures proposed by the administration to extend aid and comfort to Great Britain and those countries fighting against aggression in the Eastern Hemisphere.

Senator Sheppard's death presented the administration with an opportunity to elect a spokesman in a key state and to rally support for its interventionist policy. Sheppard was hardly cold in his grave before several powerful political figures announced their intention to seek election to his unexpired term. State Attorney General Gerald Mann, a formidable vote getter and former football hero, declared his candidacy in the forthcoming special election to fill the office. United States Representative Martin Dies of Orange, who had a national forum through his chairmanship of the House Un-American Investigating Committee, threw his hat in the ring. Governor W. Lee "Pass the Biscuits" O'Daniel sprang a characteristic shocker" by naming Andrew Jackson Houston, the 86-year-old son of the Texas hero, to take the Senate seat until a successor was chosen by special election. This was taken as proof that O'Daniel intended to seek the office as soon as he "could extricate himself from a running battle with the legislature."³⁸

In the days immediately following Sheppard's death, Harry Hopkins, President Roosevelt's closest political advisor, met with Representative Lyndon Johnson. He told Hopkins, who urged him to declare his candidacy, that he was happy in the House; he was only 32 with "plenty of time"; and that Martin Dies was a strong candidate and as a friend of the administration, he did not want to embarrass the³⁹ President by possibly decreasing White House prestige through his defeat.

After his frank discussions with Hopkins, Johnson, in mid-April, accepted an invitation from the Texas House of Representatives to address a joint session of the General Assembly on Monday, the 21st, San Jacinto Day. He would speak at 11 A.M. in the House Chamber and his address would be broadcast over one of the Texas networks.⁴⁰

At the designated hour, Johnson entered the chamber where his father had served honorably for six sessions. After being introduced by the speaker, Congressman Johnson made his speech, stressing "cooperation of every citizen in speeding up the Defense program for the nation." His talk was well received by the legislators.

On his return to Washington the next day, April 22, Johnson met with President Roosevelt at the White House. The President made no secret of his feelings. He told Johnson that these were difficult days and the administration needed every vote in the Senate on matters of foreign policy. He said he had no doubts as to Lyndon's beliefs and loyalty. He ended by urging Johnson to make the race and promised every aid.

When he emerged from the meeting, Johnson called a press conference and announced, "I am a candidate for the United States Senate" to fill the seat left vacant by the death of Senator Morris Sheppard, "one who fought a good fight for democracy."

"The fight," he announced, "must go on under the banner of Roosevelt and unity. Senator Sheppard who will be written in history as one who died working to save and serve democracy supported Roosevelt always. In failing health he fought on. His loss is great. Perhaps no one can fill his place," Johnson added.

"If Texas voters believed" him worthy, Johnson noted, he was offering his "10 years of experience with national problems," and pledged continuation of his long and consistent record of support for Roosevelt "no matter what trials may face us."

When questioned by the press as to whom he would support in the campaign for Senator Sheppard's seat, President Roosevelt stated, "First of all its up to the people of Texas to elect the man they want as their senator; second, everybody knows I cannot enter a campaign or a primary election; and third, to be truthful, all I can say is that Lyndon Johnson is a very old, old friend of mine." Johnson would be running under the White House banner.

When the Record-Courier went to press on April 24, it was still a matter of speculation whether Governor O'Daniel and Representative Wright Patman would enter the race.⁴¹ Before the filing date closed Governor O'Daniel had declared his candidacy, as had 23 minor candidates.

The announcement of Lyndon Johnson's candidacy from the White House put his name on the front page of every Texas newspaper. He had little name recognition beyond the Tenth District. He moved to correct this. Several Texas friends working in Washington resigned to come home and work for Lyndon. Among these were Harold Young, a Department of Agriculture official, and J. Alvin Wirtz, then Under Secretary of Interior.

As the administration candidate, Johnson was soon surrounded by a number of Texas political heavyweights, publishers, businessmen, and lawyers intent on helping Roosevelt in his policy of assisting the Allies, and New Deal Democrats from distant parts of the state rushed to volunteer their services. Among these were many people who would contribute to his successes in subsequent campaigns.

Raymond Buck, a Fort Worth businessman, became his campaign chairman. Publishers Charles E. Marsh of Austin and E.S. Fentress of Waco, who controlled a number of Texas newspapers, rallied to his support. So did Houston Harte, another Texas publisher. Marsh traveled with Johnson on most of his campaign dashes about the vast state. His "talent with words and skill at appealing to public emotions contributed in a major way to Johnson's central campaign theme stressing the need by President Roosevelt for a young, energetic, well-informed Senator to help build up America's strength."⁴²

2. The "Record-Courier" Endorses the Hometown Boy

Endorsing Johnson for the Senate, Stella Gliddon, who had succeeded to editorship of the Johnson City Record-Courier on the death of her husband, wrote:

Texas could not send a more able man to the Senate to take the place of the late Honorable Morris Sheppard than young Johnson. His many years of political experience in Washington

make him a ideal choice. Before becoming Congressman for the 10th District, Mr. Johnson was Secretary to Congressman Richard Kleberg of the 14th District. His next step up the ladder was NYA administrator for Texas, which position he resigned when he was elected Congressman. In close touch with President Roosevelt since his election he has gained valuable experience which fits him better for this important post than any other candidate.

From a standpoint of our long friendship with Mr. Johnson we add that we find him one of the most human persons we have ever come in contact with. He has no fair weather friends, on the contrary he seems to single out the individual who seems down and out and his genuine concern never fails to show a brighter side to the one in dispair. In our mind Mr. Johnson's attitude to his fellow-man is the keynote of . . . [success] in office. No man considerate of an individual can be inconsiderate of a group, and as long as the individual or group is for the betterment of society, you'll find Congressman Johnson right with them. And that's why we are for⁴³ our fellow townsman Lyndon B. Johnson.

3. The Campaign's Kick-Off

In the last days of April, Lyndon Johnson released details of a whirlwind campaign. Taking a cue from his successful fight for election to the seat left vacant by the death of Congressman Buchanan four years before, he announced that he would open his campaign on Saturday, May 3, in San Marcos, with his speech to be broadcast over the Texas Quality Network. His slogan would be "Roosevelt and Unity."

Blanco County friends of Johnson organized a motor caravan to the San Marcos kick-off. Sponsors urged everyone to attend so they could "be better informed on the issues in the race and to give their candidate a big hand." Participants were to rendezvous at the courthouse at 3:30 P.M., and all cars would carry banners, "Blanco County, Vote for Lyndon B. Johnson for U.S. Senate."⁴⁴

By mid-afternoon on the 3rd, cars and buses were converging on San Marcos from all directions. At 5 P.M. there was a parade led by several bands. A heavy downpour failed to dampen enthusiasm, but caused the campaign managers to shift the rally from Evans Field to the Southwest Texas State College auditorium. As the structure could not possibly hold the estimated 20,000 in attendance, loud speakers were positioned outside to enable all to hear.

The rally began at 8 o'clock with preliminary talks by friends of the candidate. Johnson was then introduced and there was a roar of applause. He delivered a fighting speech in which he stressed "unity of the people of the United States, stating that he felt that his close relationship with President Roosevelt was in his favor." He asserted that there were "no right motives in strikes that hindered the defense program. To the mothers he gave assurance that if it became necessary to vote for their boys to go to the trenches, he would resign his Senate seat and go with them."

He expressed support for a national social security plan to begin at 60 instead of 65, the Federal Housing Authority, and pledged continued interest in the welfare and education of the youth of Texas.

Although the speech was given in a serious vein, identified with the times, Johnson drew a roar of laughter on one occasion, when he stated that he had "waited for two weeks for a candidate to declare himself all out for President Roosevelt, but that none had done so. "Then," he continued, they immediately began to declare themselves, "Me for Roosevelt."

After the rally, Johnson's Blanco County friends gathered around the stage to give him a "glad handshake and encourage him in the race."⁴⁵

4. Johnson Sets a Mankilling Pace

"Franklin D. and Lyndon B." became the campaign slogan. Soon these words were appearing in hundreds of Texas shop windows and on the windshields of thousands of cars.

Johnson's advisors planned a "man-killing" schedule. Relays of drivers were worn out, as Johnson's campaign caravan motored through urban and rural counties on a dawn-to-dark schedule of out-of-door speeches and radio broadcasts.

In his campaign, Johnson, taking a cue from Governor O'Daniel's successful efforts in the 1938 and 40 elections, employed singers, string bands, and hornblowers to rally crowds. Governor O'Daniel also undertook a traveling circus. But bad luck--spring cloudbursts compounded by difficulties with the legislature--kept him in and around Austin. He concentrated on the radio to carry his message to the people. This, however, was no disadvantage, because he had the state's most popular country music band, which included three of his children.

Reporters, as well as the voters, found the campaigning of Martin Dies and Gerald Mann to be flat and colorless by comparison.

Johnson continued to drum away with his theme of "Roosevelt and Unity," and to stress his record as an activist, able "to get things done" in Washington. Governor O'Daniel and Martin Dies, two of the other three major candidates, hit hard on the "the theme of too much spending, too much government, and too many communists in Washington." Johnson, supported by thousands of young people who recalled his NYA days, pounded away on the need for a "compassionate government," and raged against the isolationists. Soon, however, all major candidates were echoing

Johnson that they were behind Roosevelt in these times of international peril and endorsed his efforts to strengthen the Nation's defenses. O'Daniel telegraphed Roosevelt volunteering the organization of a Texas army, navy, and air force as the state's contribution to a strong America. Roosevelt responded, "Preposterous."

As the weeks passed, Johnson gained strength, as his name became a household word beyond the Tenth District.⁴⁶

5. The Homefolks Campaign For Lyndon

In the second week of May, Blanco County ladies organized a "Women's Lyndon Johnson for Senator Club." Mrs. Jimmy B. Leonard, a Johnson City classmate of Johnson's, was elected chairman and Mrs. Charles Bruckner secretary. Sub-committee chairmen were Miss Babe Arrington, literature; Mrs. J. Frank Kendall, out of county contacts; and Mrs. J.F. Barnwell, in county contacts.⁴⁷

The women's group flourished, and on June 12 the Record-Courier announced that Johnson City ladies for the first time in their lives were taking an active part in politics. On Friday, the 6th, a group had driven into Austin to attend a state-wide rally of the Women's Johnson for Senator Clubs at the Stephen F. Austin Hotel. Mrs. Max R. Brooks served as mistress of ceremonies. After the county delegations had identified themselves, the ladies were asked to autograph copies of the song, "Franklin D. and Lyndon B.," which would be presented to Johnson. Before adjourning, punch and cookies were served to the visitors by the Austin club.⁴⁸

To assist their hometown boy in the campaign, the Johnson City folks purchased 10 minutes from 11:45 to 11:55 A.M., on Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Saturdays, on the Lone Star Network. Employing words and music, the people of Blanco County told the people of Texas about their favorite son. Tom Martin, the "Sage of the Sage Hills," moderated the programs.⁴⁹

On June 2, four weeks before the election, the Record-Courier came out with a special edition extolling Johnson's merits and qualifications. Most of the four-page supplement consisted of clippings from Texas daily and weekly newspapers firmly in the Johnson camp, several articles prepared and released by the Johnson campaign headquarters, and columns by nationally recognized pundits Joseph Alsop and Robert Kintner, as well as the local favorite Tom Martin. On page one there was a four-column spread of the April 1937 photograph of a beaming Franklin D. Roosevelt shaking hands with a smiling Lyndon Johnson. Governor Allred, who had been standing between them had been blocked out, as had Roosevelt's left arm.

There were other photographs. Four of these--pictures of the Boyhood Home, the Christian Church, the sign on the approaches to Johnson City reading, "JOHNSON CITY, HOME OF WORLDS LARGEST RURAL ELECTRIFICATION SYSTEM," and of a small local shop--were captioned to appeal to the home folks, as well as call attention to Johnson's virtues and several of his legislative accomplishments. There was a photograph of Johnson with his mother, taken at the time of his recent speech before the Texas legislature, and of his "pretty, gracious" wife, Lady Bird.

There was a reproduction of a letter from Johnson addressed to the people of Texas, dated June 2, at his Austin headquarters. In this letter he reiterated his San Marcos pledge of championing a social security check for every "senior citizen, beginning at the age of sixty." He had discussed this proposal with the President, and he appealed to the voters to "keep in Washington a person who can and will take up your personal problems with President Roosevelt and get results. Remember, you want results and not mere political promises."

On the front page, there was a box listing his platform, which was designed to gain support from a broad spectrum of Texans. It called for:

- (a) Unity with Roosevelt in defense of America.
- (b) Immediate, positive aid to Britain.
- (c) Unity inside America. Strikes must cease.
- (d) Jobs for all who will work.
- (e) Parity prices for farmers.
- (f) Draft management as well as boys.
- (g) Federal pensions for needy folks over 60.
- (h) Social security, aid for veterans, food and clothes for all, religious toleration.
- (i) Real action against fifth columnists and reds, not talk.
- (j) Electrification of every farm and ranch in Texas.

Editor Gliddon in an editorial, after tracing Johnson's career, reminded the readers of the Record-Courier that

there is something more about this senatorial aspirant, which is of vital importance to the people of this great state. That he has "made good" is proven by the record . . . and equally important is the fact that Lyndon Johnson enters the race with "clean hands." No one ever heard of him doing anything that was not honorable and straight-forward. He is a self made man and his friends everywhere are proud of him. A young man with vision and foresight, with the personal courage to back up his honest convictions, Lyndon Baines Johnson is the man to elect to this coveted post. In doing so the people of Texas will elect a man who is a Texan, has always been a Texan and who will work for Texans. They will elect a man

who and will help our great presi-
dent to make democracy stand.⁵⁰

On Thursday, June 26, two days before Texans would troop to the polls to cast their ballots, Editor Gliddon, in a regular edition of the Record-Courier, devoted much of the first page of her newspaper to the campaign. There were two long letters from readers--Dr. Werned Keidel of Fredericksburg and B. B. Burleson of Blanco County--urging their friends and neighbors to get out and vote for Johnson. The former told of Johnson's fight for the Bankhead Farm Parity Loan Bill, his struggle in behalf of rural electrification, and his compassion. Rancher Burleson, after describing the economic hardships of the Hoover years, focused on his financial recovery, hard work, and patriotism. He was buying defense bonds and stamps. To preserve all this he was going to vote for Lyndon Johnson, thus casting one of the ballots that "will put him where he can help our great president to preserve the American way of life."

In addition to her regular column, in which she identified and described how readers representing divergent ethnic and economic backgrounds were working to insure Lyndon Johnson's election, Editor Gliddon ran a four column spread, set in bold-face type, titled, "As One Friend to Another." She used this to list and document four reasons why her readers should vote for Johnson. These were: (a) local pride; (b) his success in securing improvements which were of benefit to the county, i.e., funds to construct the Johnson City School home economics building, the REA program and the PEC facilities, and the Blanco school building; (c) his support of President Roosevelt's foreign and national defense policies; and (d) his understanding of the social security system. As for the latter, Mrs. Gliddon called attention to Governor O'Daniel's failure to make good on his 1940 campaign promise to rise old-age pensions to \$30 per month.

She appealed to local voters to

lay aside prejudice and jealousy .
. . . to see this man as your
friend, your fellow-townsman, as
Sam Johnson's boy, to see him as
the ablest of the 27 candidates and
send him back to Washington as
junior senator of Texas.

Through him you are a friend
of President Roosevelt. He will
hear Lyndon Johnson because he
knows him. Lyndon Johnson will
hear you because he knows you.
Let's vote for a friend, folks,
what do you say?⁵¹

6. The Family Beats the Bushes

As to be expected in a family such as Sam Johnson's, the mother and sisters and brother pitched in to assist Lyndon in his state-wide campaign.

Although she was hospitalized in Temple for several weeks during this period, Lyndon's mother wrote letters in his behalf, urging friends and relatives to actively support her son. Occasionally, these letters backfired. A distant cousin, M. H. "Mike" Thomas, although he provided data for the family history which she was compiling, was a Roosevelt hater. He informed Rebekah Johnson that since the New Deal had taken office "not one farmer in 100" could make a living. The Nation had lost its market for farm exports, while the government was "paying the farmer \$10 to 15 dollars per bale" of cotton "more than they can sell it for and taxing innocent people to pay the farmer for this surplus." The country's national

debt had skyrocketed, and "the president and vice president have wrecked the greatest country on earth."

He had listened to Lyndon Johnson on the radio. While he found him a good speaker he could not support him. This, Thomas wrote, was "the FIRST time in my life that I ever failed to respond to any and all calls of my kin."⁵²

Aunt Annie Baines, because of her age (86 years) would be unable to actively campaign for Lyndon, as Rebekah Johnson had asked. She, however, would speak to her friends in his behalf. Her son-in-law, she wrote, was doing his utmost for Lyndon. As he was a respected Gatesville druggist, he was able to do much across the counter electioneering, besides mailing out Johnson for Senator literature.⁵³

While Lyndon's mother wrote letters, his sisters Lucia and Rebekah mailed out campaign literature and hosted teas. Sister Josefa, whom Sam Houston Johnson recalls as perhaps the best politician in the family, was out beating the bushes, drumming up enthusiasm and votes. Sam Houston, who was working in Memphis, served as a long distance political consultant, talking with his brother by telephone several times daily. Lady Bird Johnson worked long hours in the Stephen F. Austin campaign headquarters. In these early campaigns she found it embarrassing to solicit votes for her spouse. Eventually, she would, by employing her charm and intelligence, become an effective and successful spokeswoman for Lyndon.⁵⁴

7. Pappy O'Daniel Ekes Out a Victory

By the end of a strenuous and hard fought campaign, which saw him hospitalized for several days at Temple with throat trouble, Johnson had established himself as the co-favorite with Governor O'Daniel in the opinion polls. There were several key equations, however, that could not be measured. Nineteen hundred and forty-one was a special election, and being an off-year there were no local contests to spur interest and encourage drives to register new voters. The number of eligible voters with their poll tax receipts was considerably less than in the 1940 election. Then there was the political ambitions of the lieutenant governor, Coke R. Stevenson, to become governor. This would become automatic if O'Daniel were elected senator.

Stevenson, a Kimble County rancher, had "a working relationship" with James E. Ferguson. "Farmer Jim" had been a friend and ally of Little Sam

Johnson, a guest in the Johnson home, and knew Lyndon. He had been governor of Texas, had been impeached and removed from office in 1917, and had seen his wife, "Ma" Ferguson, twice elected governor.

Lyndon Johnson's campaigning and vigorous support of the New Deal antagonized the Stevenson-Ferguson forces. During the final days of the race, Ferguson took sides and signed newspaper advertisements, calling on his friends to vote for Lee O'Daniel. Although Ferguson had been politically inactive for a number of years, he was remembered and had considerable clout in many rural areas.⁵⁵

Then, on June 22, the war was given a new dimension as Germany and her allies turned on the Soviet Union. Much of the Red Air Force was destroyed on the ground by the savage surprise attack, and Hitler's panzer columns raced ahead on a 3,000-mile front extending from the Black Sea to the Arctic coast. Hundreds of thousands of Soviet troops were encircled in a huge kessel west of Minsk. To most observers, it seemed that the Soviet Union was about to suffer a fate similar to France.

Texans went to the polls on Saturday, June 28. For 48 hours Johnson seemed to be a winner. On Sunday morning, he had a lead of more than 5,000 voters over O'Daniel. Johnson telephoned Alvin Wirtz, remarking that this appeared to be fairly solid.

"Just wait," Wirtz answered, "by tomorrow you won't have anywhere near five thousand votes."

Wirtz was correct. Early on the 30th, additional O'Daniel votes were found in "corrected" returns from East Texas rural counties dominated by Jim Ferguson. These counties gave thumping majorities to Governor O'Daniel, pushing him by the morning of July 2 into the lead by a razor thin margin. When the nearly 600,000 votes were tabulated, O'Daniel led Johnson by 1,311 votes and was declared the winner.

Johnson's brother, Sam Houston, and other advisors urged him to demand a recount. Knowing such measures are seldom, if ever, successful, Johnson replied, "You can't win 'em all, Sam, there's always another ball game." Johnson then called in the press, and conceding defeat, stated, "I will accept the outcome of the official count." O'Daniel had not been so charitable. When he had trailed, he had threatened a challenge. Hailing Johnson's good sportsmanship, the editor of the Record-Courier wrote, "Lyndon Johnson proved once more beyond the shadow of a doubt that unity was his goal." Not a single threat was made to "go into the election" or suggestions of a "crooked manipulation by press or otherwise."⁵⁶

8. The Defeated Candidate's Homecoming

On Saturday, July 5, following the defeat, Lyndon Johnson returned briefly to Johnson City and his Boyhood Home. While a crowd assembled in the front yard and on 9th Street to say hello to their favorite son, a radio microphone was positioned on the east front gallery. As he spoke of his father and mother, there were tears in Lyndon's eyes. His mother, recently released from a Temple hospital, stood at his side. Mrs. Johnson, deeply

beloved by all her Blanco County friends, spoke to them and thanked them for their interest and assured them that "never was she any happier to see them all gathered under the trees in front of her home." She, too, was saddened and wiped tears from her eyes, when she expressed the wish "that Sam could be with us."

Johnson's address was "more of a friendly greeting than a political speech," and his friends were happy to have him honor his little home town with his final broadcast of the campaign.⁵⁷

Commenting on Johnson's defeat, Editor Gliddon of the Record-Courier observed, "We believe that in the near future this native son of Blanco County will do himself and us proud and if he ever needs our support we for one will rally to him quite as strong as we did in the last election."⁵⁸

E. The War and Immediate Postwar Years

1. Lyndon Johnson Keeps a Pledge and Goes to War

On December 7, 1941, forces of Imperial Japan launched a devastating surprise attack on Pearl Harbor and other United States and British bases in the Far East. The next day, Monday, Lyndon B. Johnson, along with all the members of Congress but one, voted a declaration of war against Japan. Before the day was over, Johnson, who held a commission as lieutenant commander in the Naval Reserve, requested President Roosevelt to assign him to active duty with the United States fleet. In doing so, he was carrying out the pledge he had made to the Texas voters, "If I am elected to the Senate seat, and . . . have to vote to send your boys into the trenches, I will leave my seat and go with them." Thus,⁵⁹ although he had failed in his bid for the seat, he made good on his promise.

Commander Johnson soon became bored with the desk job assigned him by Secretary of the Navy Frank Knox. Within a few weeks, he was able to wrangle an assignment overseas. He was to proceed to the Pacific, where the Japanese war machine was dealing a series of staggering blows to the forces of the ABDA powers.

Leaving Washington on December 21, Commander Johnson and his wife headed for the west coast, where he was to be attached to the office of the Chief of the United States-New Zealand Command.

En route, they stopped in Austin to spend their first wartime Christmas with Mrs. Rebekah Johnson and other friends. They then continued on to San Francisco, where Mrs. Johnson remained until January 20, when she returned to the Nation's capital.

Before returning to Washington from California, Lady Bird Johnson spent an exciting three weeks in San Francisco. During the days, while Lyndon was engrossed with his duties, she found time for "sight-seeing to the local art galleries, museums, Chinatown, and the ocean beach." She spent the evenings "doing some typing and short-hand" for her busy husband, who was now wearing two hats--those of a congressman and naval officer.

Upon returning to Washington from her 10,000-mile trip, Lady Bird took charge of the office. To improve her secretarial skills, she entered a business school to better her typing and short-hand. After about four weeks she "graduated" herself, because it was so interesting at the office, and she wished to "get here early and spend a full day (whereas I had been spending about five hours a day in school)."

On February 27 she wrote Lyndon's uncle and aunt, the Sterling Prices, and asked them to drop me a line whenever you think of anything, big or trivial, that Lyndon's office could be doing to be of service to his friends in Austin and the district, and "whenever you hear of any news we ought to know."

John Connally having also gone on active duty with the Navy, Mrs. Johnson and Nellie Connally were sharing a small Washington apartment. She had sublet her and Lyndon's "big and lovely apartment" at 2737 Devonshire Place, NW, "at a nice profit to help out his Navy salary." She and Nellie shared the cleaning and cooking duties.⁶⁰

In late February, from the Pacific coast, Commander Johnson addressed a card to Editor Gliddon. On March 5 Mrs. Gliddon informed readers of the Record-Courier that, although just a line, it demonstrates his "thoughtfulness of the folks back home." While the postmark was San Francisco, "the length of its coming" indicated to the editor that "Lyndon may have mailed it out on the 'high seas.'" Along with thousands of "other young men he was carrying the torch high for the freedom of our country."

Editor Gliddon had also heard from Lady Bird Johnson. While Lyndon was on active duty, she was running his Washington office. She, it was observed, was "helping to carry on the work Lyndon had started and to which he still gives as much attention as possible." The people of the Tenth District, Mrs. Gliddon wrote, "need not worry for a minute that their needs are not being considered," because an able staff of secretaries under Mrs. Johnson's capable supervision keep the Congressman advised of his constituents' wants. If experience were a guide, there was no doubt but that LBJ, although more than 2,000 miles away, would make every effort to cope with their requests.⁶¹

Lyndon Johnson supporters in late March, with the American-Filipino forces on Luzon closely invested on Bataan and the islands at the entrance to Manila Bay, began circulating petitions requesting that his name be placed on the ballot for the Democratic primary to be held on the fourth Saturday of July. Inasmuch as it would be impossible for Johnson personally to campaign, his Tenth District friends were rallying behind him.

Endorsing this movement, the Record-Courier observed that Lyndon Johnson had "made the 10th District one of the best congressman of all time." Attention was again called to his promise to the voters that "the day I have to sign a bill to send your boy into the trenches, that day will I leave my seat in Congress and go with him." Unlike many politicians, Johnson had kept his work, entering the United States Navy on the "same day that Congress declared war on Japan."

Searching for a precedent that would be familiar to her readers, Editor Gliddon reported that in World War I current Texas Senator Tom Connally had left his seat in Congress to serve in the armed forces. Voters of the Eleventh District, she continued, would have been "insulted" had anyone suggested that Connally be in Washington rather than in the military. So should Tenth District electors react about their congressman, "who has always served with unselfish interest." Moreover, any "official who leaves Washington for the services has a love for his fellow man that no 'politician' has ever possessed." This proved to Editor Gliddon that "your welfare and mine is the same aim as his and that is what Lyndon Johnson has always had uppermost in his mind--your welfare and mine."

Voters who had not signed a Johnson for re-election petition were urged to do so, as they could be found in most Johnson City business houses.⁶²

As yet no one had announced that he planned to run against Johnson, and his friends did not think anyone would. Editor Gliddon for one believed it would take a "lot of nerve to oppose a man who has always loved his people and now his proven⁶³ that he loves country more because a \$10,000 job was seemingly thrown in."

War news from the Pacific was grim during April and through the first three weeks of May. On April 9 the "Battling Bastards of Bataan" capitulated; on May 6 Lt. Gen. Jonathan M. Wainwright surrendered all United States and Filipino forces to Lt. Gen. Masaharu Homma; in midApril the fast carrier force of Vice Admiral Chuichi Nagumo, which had been running wild since Pearl Harbor, sortied into the Bay of Bengal and inflicted severe losses on the Royal Navy; and in early May, in the Coral Sea, a Japanese task force moving against Port Moresby was turned back, but with heavy loss to the American carrier force.

By the first week of May, 22,564 Tenth District electors had signed the petitions, and on Saturday, the 3d, they were mailed to Johnson's Washington office. Mrs. Johnson and the staff forwarded them to her husband, who was in the Southwest Pacific, so he might know of the esteem in which he was held by the homefolks.

Johnson's friends were gratified by the success of their campaign which had commenced in Burnet County, because the number of signatures far exceeded their estimates. For days after the petitions had been forwarded, cards and letters continued to be received, asking that the sender's name be added.⁶⁴

It had taken direct action on Johnson's part to get an overseas assignment. He had soon tired of his duties behind a LSD (Large Steel Desk). On a brief visit with his brother Sam Houston, who was working in Denver, Lyndon complained:

I'm not finding out anything about the war. I'm not doing anything. I would be worth more to the country in Congress than I am in this assignment.

I'm going to Washington and talk to the Boss. He's got to get something done about me.

Upon reaching Washington, one of Johnson's stops was at the White House. While there he succeeded in securing a mission for which he was well qualified. He was attached to Vice Adm. Richard A. Ghormley's staff, and was to travel to the Southwest Pacific. There, Johnson was to collect data on the performance of military equipment and the effectiveness of military equipment procedures.

Mid-May found Johnson island hopping across the Pacific, on flights that took him to New Caledonia, Fiji, New Zealand, Australia, and New Guinea. He even managed to see combat, flying as an observer in a B26 light bomber on a June 9 bombing attack against the Japanese base at Lae, New Guinea. The plane was damaged by enemy Zeros, and Johnson saw a member of the crew wounded. Although one engine was knocked out, the pilot nursed the craft back across the towering Owen Stanley Mountains, landing at one of the Port Moresby strips.⁶⁵

On June 11, two days after the Lae raid, Johnson departed Darwin, Australia, aboard a B17, dubbed The Swoose by her crew. There was engine trouble, and the big Flying Fortress was compelled to make a crash landing in the Queensland outback. Nobody was injured, and Commander Johnson responded much as he would have on the campaign hustlings back in Texas. One of the crew recalled in William L. White's Queens Die Proudly:

We get out. Pretty soon Australian ranchers begin crawling out of holes in the ground--I don't know where else they came from--and right away Lieutenant Commander Johnson gets busy. He begins to get acquainted.

They tell him where we are and some of them go off to get a truck to take us into town [Cloncurry] where we can telephone, and more keep coming, and Johnson is shaking hands all around, and he comes back and tells us these are real folks--the best damn folks in the world, except maybe the folks in his own Texas.

Pretty soon he knows all their first names, and they're telling him why there ought to be a high tariff on wool, and there's no question he swung that county for

Johnson before he left. He was in his element. I know he sure swung The Swoose crew. He⁶⁶ can carry that precinct any day.

When Johnson reached Brisbane, Gen. Douglas MacArthur decorated him with the Silver Star, the United States Army's third highest award for valor, citing his heroic conduct on the Lae raid. Soon thereafter, Johnson returned to the United States.

2. Johnson Returns from the Southwest Pacific

President Roosevelt now summoned all congressmen, who had deserted the halls of government to seek glory on the battlefield, to return to Washington and resume the duties to which they had been elected. When Johnson arrived in the Nation's capital, he reported that while American soldiers, sailors, and marines were second to none, their equipment and ordnance left much to be desired. He lambasted "stuffed shirt generals and admirals" and called for leadership willing to slash red tape.

"We must get rid of the indecisive, stupid, and incompetent in high military positions," he fumed:

We are going to give our men leadership and equipment superior to that of any in the world. We are going to have to move quickly to coordinate dive bombers and domestic politics, tanks and military strategy, ships and the will of the people. Management and manpower are going to have to be closely woven into a smoothly functioning machine devoid of⁶⁷ squabbles and pretty jealousies.

By this time there had been an improvement in the military situation in the Pacific. A Japanese amphibious force poised to seize Port Moresby had been blunted in the Coral Sea fight, during the first week of May. Then, four weeks later, at the battle of Midway, the core of the Emperor's fast carrier striking force, which had been cutting a swath of destruction and dismay through Allied defenses and bases since Pearl Harbor, was destroyed. Although few people recognized it at the time, this was a major turning point in the Pacific War. But in Europe, North Africa, and the North Atlantic, the situation continued bleak. Axis forces in the Ukraine smashed a Soviet offensive and launched a drive destined to carry their forces deep into the Caucasus and gave them a toehold on the Volga at Stalingrad. After defeating British forces in the Western Desert and capturing Tobruk, Col. Gen. Erwin Rommel's columns lunged to within 60 miles of Alexandria, before their surge was checked. On the North Atlantic, German U-boats continued to take a terrible toll.

Back home in the Tenth District, Editor Gliddon continued to beat the drums for her favorite candidate. Subscribers to the Record-Courier were reminded that Lyndon B. Johnson "has probably done more for the district than any one single congressman, and we believe we could also safely include senators." The electors were reminded of his April 1941 speech before the joint-session of the Texas legislature, and his challenge "that it was later than we think."⁶⁸

No opposition presented itself and Lyndon B. Johnson was renominated on July 29 by the Democratic voters of the Tenth District for another term in the United States House of Representatives.

On Sunday, August 2, Lyndon Johnson returned to Johnson City for the day. He was a guest of Tom and Kittie Johnson, his uncle and aunt, and sat down to a dinner prepared by his Aunt Kittie, who knew just "what dishes he enjoyed most, and the table was loaded with good things to eat." LBJ ate fried chicken, and laughed when he said that he could get first pick of the piece entirely by having to eat what was given him." He enjoyed the homemade ice cream, "the kind that one likes in a saucer, because it has no filler in it," and homebaked bread and butter.

Johnson, after dinner, discussed his wartime experiences in the Southwest Pacific and showed some photographs he had taken. The latter gave his friends and relatives an idea of what Australia was like. Conscious of security regulations, Johnson was restrained in his remarks regarding the military situation, but he did say "that he never saw men with the determination that our boys have and that they seem to know no fear." They were "out to win this war and they don't care much how thick the fighting, their only thought is to get the job done once and for always."

Once or twice the Congressman lowered his voice when recalling a friend who had made the supreme sacrifice.

While in Australia, Johnson had been felled by pneumonia and had been hospitalized. Securing an early release, he had over-exerted himself, and, suffering a relapse, had been hospitalized in Fiji while returning to the states. Despite the loss of 25 pounds, his Johnson City friends thought he looked good.

Lyndon Johnson enjoyed the day immensely, and, on leaving for Austin, "expressed a hope that it would not be long before he would spend another day."⁶⁹

Lyndon and his wife were back in Johnson City on Saturday, August 22, the day of the Democratic run-offs. As they walked down the corridor of the Blanco County Courthouse to cast their votes, Lyndon beamed and seemed about to shout "its good to be at home." Lady Bird also impressed the electors, and one observed, she is "one of those folks who loves people better than anybody else and she loves Lyndon's home people and they love her."⁷⁰

3. Johnson Returns to Washington for the 79th Congress

Since he had no Republican opposition, Lyndon Johnson had no worries when the voters in 47 of the 48 states went to the polls on November 3. The election, nationally, did not go well for the Democrats, and they lost a number of seats in the House and Senate. In the former the number of Democrats had been reduced from 268 to 218, while the GOP had increased its membership from 162 to 208. There were accordingly many new faces present, when Sam Rayburn, who had succeeded to the Speakership on the death of William Bankhead in September 1940, convened the 1st Session of the 78th Congress, on January 6, 1943.

Chairman Vinson assigned Johnson to head a special subcommittee of the House Naval Affairs Committee with the task of searching out and identifying wasteful practices in procurement, manpower, and policies. At President Roosevelt's request he made an inspection of military facilities in the eastern Aleutian Islands and Alaska. The occupation of Attu and Kiska by Japanese forces and the June 3, 1942, air attack on Dutch Harbor had focused attention on that area, and measures had been taken to bolster our Alaskan defenses.

As an influential member of the House Naval Affairs Committee, Johnson was instrumental in bringing to Texas numerous activities, including the Naval R.O.T.C. unit at the University of Texas and a V12 program at Georgetown's Southwestern University.

On Monday, May 31, 1943, Representative Johnson was in his native state, where he delivered the commencement address at Southwestern University and received an honorary degree of Doctor of Laws. His speech, which was broadcast by the Texas Quality Network, dealt with post-war problems, and he cautioned the graduates "to be vigilant and be ever⁷¹ on the alert for subversive talk and acts of so-called friends of the nation."

A decisive change in the fortunes of war on all major fronts was responsible for the changed atmosphere that enabled LBJ to speak of post-war America. In late October 1942 the British Eighth Army had attacked at El Alamein in the Western Desert. On November 8 American and British forces had landed in French North Africa. Between them these allied armies, in a hard-fought six-month campaign, destroyed the Axis forces in North Africa and were now preparing to invade Sicily. On the vast eastern front, the Wehrmacht had finally met its match. Counterattacking, the Red Army encircled and then, in January, destroyed the Sixth German Army at Stalingrad. Hitler's legions were also compelled to abandon the drive that had carried them deep into the Caucasus and retire into the Kuban bridgehead. At sea, in the North Atlantic, the Uboat menace was being mastered.

In the Southwest Pacific, United States sea, air, and land forces had blunted and then hurled back the Japanese in a series of costly battles centering on Guadalcanal. A similar fate had been meted out to the Emperor's soldiers by Australian-American forces at Buna and Gona in New Guinea. The Fifth Air Force was making it hazardous for the Japanese to reinforce other Northeast New Guinea bases.

Against this backdrop, Blanco County friends made plans to put on their "best bib and tucker and pay homage to" Representative Johnson. This homecoming was scheduled for Saturday, August 21. Plans had surfaced at a Johnson City Chamber of Commerce meeting in June, and others had promptly climbed on the bandwagon.

An invitation to participate in the program was accepted by the popular Ben Hur Shrine Band of Austin. Local ladies volunteered to bring fried chicken, salads, and cookies to be served cafeteria style. Bread and drinks would be furnished by the Chamber of Commerce. "A bang up program" would follow the supper, with Roy Murray acting as master of ceremonies. The climax to be a speech by Johnson. All citizens were to "come and remain with him for the evening," so when Lyndon returned to Washington he would "remember fondly this party of his home county."

Saturday evening found hundreds of citizens in town to hear and see their congressman, and show how much they appreciated his efforts in their behalf. After the dinner, Judge J. H. Clark welcomed the crowd and V. B. Goar and T. E. Patton introduced the guest of honor. In his speech at the high school auditorium, Johnson praised the people of Blanco County "for their splendid response to the war effort both on the home and military fronts." He told of his service in the Southwest Pacific and of "the sacrifices the boys are making in every battle." He compared the "hardships" of these boys with the "hardships" of the citizens, which "proved beyond a doubt that we are still the best fed and clothed nation on the world." He spoke optimistically about the war situation, of the defeat of the Axis in North Africa, the successful landing in Sicily, and the fighting on New Georgia. He reiterated the plea made by the military that "we must still work and work hard if we are to save the lives of our boys by bringing an end to this war as quickly as possible."⁷²

During the year Lady Bird Johnson inherited a modest sum, and the question presented itself of investing it wisely. "We had never really faced up to what would happen to us if I were defeated in politics," Lyndon recalled. Lady Bird, he continued, "had a degree in journalism from the University of Texas. She had always thought she could get a job on a newspaper if she had to."

The inheritance gave them an opportunity to invest for the future. Their initial impulse was to buy a newspaper. But the only newspaper then for sale in their price range was too far removed from the Tenth District.

They now learned that a Austin radio station, KTBC, was nearly bankrupt and could be had for what they could afford to pay. Before making a final commitment, Johnson contacted Austin publishers Charles E. Marsh and E. S. Fentress. They advised the Johnsons to go ahead. After purchasing KTBC, Lyndon Johnson persuaded his old friend and associate from NYA days, Jesse Kellam, to join⁷³ the radio enterprise as manager, with Mrs. Johnson as president of the firm.

In the late winter of 1944 the Johnsons became parents for the first time. On March 23 the Record-Courier informed its readers that Congressman Johnson, on Monday morning, had passed out cigars and had received

congratulations from his friends in the Nation's capital. On Sunday night, the 19th, his wife had given birth to a daughter, Lynda Bird,⁷⁴ their first child. The baby had weighed in at seven pounds seven ounces.

4. The 1944 Primary and General Elections

In early May, Secretary of the Navy Frank Knox died. President Roosevelt, cognizant of Lyndon Johnson's interests and yeoman service on the House Naval Affairs Committee, considered naming the Texan to that important post. Once again, as he had five years before, when offered the position of Rural Electrification Administrator, Johnson refused, preferring to retain his seat in Congress.⁷⁵ Roosevelt then named James V. Forrestal to the position.

In 1944 Johnson's seat in the House of Representatives was challenged in the Democratic primary by Buck Taylor of Travis County. Because of gas rationing and travel restrictions, Lyndon Johnson decided against undertaking a campaign similar to that which had won him the Tenth District in 1937. Being a popular incumbent in a region where congressional seniority was a great advantage, Johnson felt reasonably secure. He therefore determined to contact the voters through their local newspapers.

On July 13 the Record-Courier carried an article signed by Johnson, announcing that "this visit through the columns of your newspapers may be the only one we will have during the three-week congressional recess, and I want to discuss some of the things I know are uppermost in your minds."

Johnson began by pointing out that in the 31 months, since Pearl Harbor, it had been impossible for him to travel about the district as heretofore. The voters were reminded that on December 9, 1941, he had donned the uniform of a lieutenant commander in the Navy, and had served until recalled by President Roosevelt, and with other members of Congress in the reserve placed on inactive duty. Since returning to his seat in Congress, he had "scarcely missed a roll call."

The months spent "with our fighting men on the ground, on aerial missions, and in a Fiji Island hospital" had guided his votes. While overseas he had learned that there were "three things men must have in order to fight: weapons, food, and freedom from worry about their loved ones."

To provide weapons the people in defense plants must work. Because he knew how the "fighting men felt," he had led the fight against absenteeism in defense industries; voted for the Smith-Connally Labor Bill; and had voted to over-ride President Roosevelt's veto of that bill, thereby earning the ire of John L. Lewis and the labor czars. His course of action had been dictated by the belief that his "political future" was less important than that men "might die for lack of proper weapons."

To provide food, the farmer and rancher needed "every possible assistance of the government, over-burdened as he is with shortages of labor and adequate equipment." Johnson had fought for government payments to dairy and poultry people, and had secured a floor on poultry prices, "so that these food sources should not be dried up." He had voted

to increase funds available for conservation and to "lighten the farmers' backbreaking tasks as much as possible." He had struggled for and still supported a price of 25¢ per pound for cotton. Tenth District farmers could not make "end meet when they paid such high prices for cotton chopping and such large amounts for cotton picking without a big advance in the cotton market." He and other Southern and Western congressmen had tried to "put over this increase and we must bring" in sufficient Mexican labor to insure that the 1944 cotton crop is picked at a reasonable price.

To win security for "the loved ones of our fighting men," it was vital that dependents be able to live on the meager allotment from the government. Generals and admirals appearing before the House Naval Affairs Committee had stated that price controls and rationing were necessary, not only to prevent sky-rocketing prices but to equally distribute what was available. As a native of Gillespie and Blanco Counties, where men were "independent because they came up the hard way, any sort of government regulation goes against the grain." But, Johnson continued, he would not set personal preference "against the expert opinion of our military leaders."

Johnson did not like bureaucrats any better than his homefolks, but he disliked war more. "There is nothing pleasant about war," he informed his constituents, from "the minor inconveniences we have here at home, to the flame-throwers and shot and shell and mud and fevers which our fighters must face." As soon as "we're rid of the first big job, the war," Johnson pledged, "I will lead the fight to abolish WPB, OPA, and WFA, and all other agencies of that type thrust upon us by the Axis."

Getting rid of these economic controls, however, would be only one aspect of the post-war readjustment. A bigger task would be "translating into reality the dreams that all of us have about Texas' future." If the war had "a silver lining," it has been to show "us what we can make out of Texas in the future, in terms of developing our natural resources and channeling them into industry."

Dams constructed by the Lower Colorado River Authority were available with a surplus of power. The Tenth District possessed reserves of oil and gas, which the war had demonstrated could be converted into rubber and other synthetics. The soil would grow "starch plants around which a great plastic industry will be built." The cedar-clad hills, now useless in terms of money, would be a "source for building materials in view of wood hardening chemicals developed by war chemists."⁷⁶

The Democratic voters of Texas went to the polls on Saturday, July 22. In Blanco County there was a light turnout, with only 550 votes cast. Although there was a torrid race for governor, local interest centered on the contest between Lyndon Johnson and Buck Taylor. When the ballots were counted, Johnson held a lead in his home county of 387 to 135. He ran equally as strong in eight of the other Tenth District counties, and was certified as the Democratic nominee.⁷⁷

Two days before, meeting in Chicago, the Democratic National Convention nominated President Roosevelt for a fourth-term in the White House.

After a bitter fight, the dump Wallace forces triumphed and Senator Harry S Truman of Missouri was named as FDR's Vice Presidential running mate. The Republicans had already selected their ticket for the November general election--it was Governor Thomas E. Dewey of New York for President and Governor John Bricker of Ohio for Vice President.

In both Europe and the Pacific, United Nations forces were sweeping forward on all fronts, except in China. Six weeks before United States and British armies had stormed the beaches of Normandy. German efforts to hurl them back into the English Channel failed. Now Gen. Dwight D. Eisenhower's armies were building up strength for a breakthrough that was to carry them across France and Belgium and deep into the Netherlands. In Italy, Rome had been captured in early June, but the Allies' lunge toward the Po had been brought up short. Winston Churchill's soft underbelly of Europe proved to be a chimera. The American Air Corps by day and the RAF by night were hammering German cities into rubble.

On the Eastern Front, the Red Army, since the failure of "Citadel" in July 1943, had pounded relentlessly westward. Romania and Finland had been knocked out of the war, and Soviet armies were closing in on Warszawa. On July 20, at Rastenburg, Adolph Hitler narrowly escaped assassination.

The situation was as favorable in the Pacific. Saipan and Tinian had been stormed, and on July 21 U.S. Marines, supported by Army troops, landed on Guam. Japanese naval air power was shattered in the battle of the Philippine Sea. The loss of Saipan and defeat in the "Great Turkey Shoot," as the Philippine Sea battle was called, led to the resignation of Prime Minister Hideki Tojo, whose government had led Japan into war. General MacArthur's American-Australian command had leap-frogged 1,100 miles along the northern New Guinea coast and had seized bases on New Britain and the Admiralty Islands, leaving thousands of Japanese to wither on the vine.

For the first time in his legislative career, Lyndon Johnson had a Republican opponent in the general election. Since the district had never elected a member of the GOP, Johnson ignored the challenge. In fact, several Johnson biographers seem to be unaware that he had opposition in both the primary and general elections this year.

When the voters went to the polls on November 7, they gave LBJ a resounding endorsement, sending Republican candidate Arthur H. Bartell down to defeat. Johnson carried Blanco County by a five to one margin, receiving 1,190 votes to Bartell's 329. Coke Stevenson, who was re-elected governor of Texas by a landslide, led his opponent in Blanco County by a similar vote.⁷⁸

Nineteen hundred and forty-four was also a Democratic year nationally. Roosevelt and Truman handily defeated Dewey and Bricker, while in the Senate Democratic strength fell from 58 to 56 and in the House increased from 218 to 242.

5. LBJ Wins A Peacetime But Bitter Election

On January 3, 1945, Lyndon B. Johnson was at his seat when Speaker Rayburn convened the 1st Session of the 79th Congress. On April 12 President Roosevelt died of a cerebral hemorrhage at Warm Springs, Georgia. One of Johnson's staff, on hearing the news, wailed, "What will become of us?" There's no one left."

Johnson answered, "There's Mr. Truman."⁷⁹

Despite this display of bravado, Roosevelt's death saddened Johnson, leaving him for weeks in a depressed mood. "He was like a second daddy to me," Johnson told a reporter, "I am absolutely crushed."⁸⁰

Germany surrendered unconditionally in early May, and Japan, after atomic bombs had been dropped on Hiroshima and Nagasaki and the Soviet Union had declared war on the Emperor's forces, gave up in August. World War II was over, and the United States lost no time in bringing the boys home and relaxing most wartime controls. In Congress there were reports to be made. When Chairman Carl Vinson of the House Naval Affairs Committee forwarded the final report of one of the subcommittees to Secretary of Navy Forrestal, he commended Lyndon Johnson's work as chairman of the group. He cited the young Texan for his work in "creating the greatest and most efficient Navy the world had ever seen."

Chairman Vinson wished it recorded that "the outstanding record of service of the various subcommittees was primarily due to their able, highly energetic and devoted chairman," Lyndon B. Johnson. The subject subcommittees in the 78th and 79th Congresses had inquired into the organization of procurement activities and legal actions of the Navy; industrial efficiency and working conditions in navy yards, ordnance plants, air stations, and other shore installations; aviation training programs; draft deferments, and utilization of officer and enlisted personnel; and surplus property disposition and related activities.

In his 30 years in the House, Vinson had never seen such excellent studies and reports as submitted by the Johnson subcommittees.

Vinson also called the Secretary's attention to Johnson's service in the Southwest Pacific in 1942, and cited his service as chairman of the subcommittees as "far beyond and above the call of duty."

No desire for personal publicity had motivated Johnson, and, as Vinson wrote, "his services were performed without thought of reward other than the lasting satisfaction of serving one's country." It therefore seemed appropriate that, in transmitting these reports, Vinson should record his "satisfaction for the work of the man who has done so much, with so little prior credit for his country."⁸¹

In late May 1946 Johnson, as expected, announced that he would be a candidate for "re-election to the office of representative in Congress for the Tenth District."⁸²

He planned to be in Johnson City on Friday night, May 31, to make the commencement address to the 23 members of the graduating class. A national railroad strike, however, compelled him to remain in Washington, and his handsome Secretary John Connally ably filled in for him.⁸³

Once again, Johnson, as he had two years before, would have opposition in the Democratic primary. Conservative politicians, tired of Johnson's "brash New Deal posture and suspicious of his prosperity" decided it was time "to elect a less rambunctious Congressman." Their choice was District Judge Hardy Hollers of Clarendon, Texas.

The opposition was wellfinanced, but poorly organized. The Hollers' campaign consisted primarily of mud-slinging attacks on Johnson. He was accused of "feathering his own nest by virtue of his New Deal influence."⁸⁴

The Hollers people charged that Johnson had bought his Dillman Street triplex for \$10,000, and had retired the note in a matter of days. It was whispered that LBJ owned practically every apartment building in Austin. Johnson ignored these accusations, and refused to mention Hollers' name. He held that it was a mistake to give "the other guy publicity."⁸⁵

Johnson met this challenge from the right with a well organized staff and response. By telephone, by radio, by newspaper, and in person, he carried his message to his constituents. "He had files dating from 1937 listing the names of every person and every family assisted or contacted during his tenure. His letter-writing brigade pecked out streams of personalized communications to these voters."⁸⁶

Although Congress was in session, Johnson took time in July to spend several days in Texas campaigning. On Monday afternoon, July 8, he was in Johnson City and addressed a crowd of 300 gathered in front of the Blanco County Courthouse. He spoke more about "home and home ties than about the campaign." He opened his address with recollections of his boyhood, and reminded his listeners that "he need not tell them about himself since they knew him since he was a barefoot boy."

Johnson was applauded when he assured the crowd that he was "concerned about the little man for the big guys can take care of themselves." The audience was cautioned that only two things threatened their securitythe atomic bomb and world peace and the "general economic condition which could cause ruinous inflation." They were told to "quit kidding about political power and to become the board of directors." He told of plans "to make the hills of central Texas a beauty and vacation spot for the nation," and of efforts to construct dams on the lower Colorado and make that river navigable for barge traffic.

Johnson spoke of hunger abroad, and how Americans "griped" and had more to eat than was usually good for them." This shamed many of the listeners because it was true.

After Johnson had finished speaking, there was "hugging and kissing" for his Johnson City friends rather than customary handshakes. There were "even a few tears from women who had helped rear Lyndon B. Johnson and

from those who had received letters and help from Washington when their sons were missing in action."

Mrs. Clara Redford, former postmistress, declared that most mail coming into town was from Johnson's congressional office. A gold star mother told Johnson that although her son would not be around to vote, he had always been for LBJ.⁸⁷

Commenting on Johnson's speech, the Record-Courier pointed out that "heavy duties" in Washington had heretofore prevented their congressman from taking his case to the people. At any moment, between now and election day, Editor Gliddon wrote, he could be called back to the capitol for votes on vital measures effecting OPA, the atomic bomb, and labor legislation.⁸⁸

On the Thursday before the voters went to the polls, the Record-Courier informed its readers that Lyndon Johnson had two opponents in the Democratic primary. His preoccupation with affairs in Washington had limited his campaigning. Many bills effecting his constituents' welfare were pending and required the presence and vote of every member. Johnson had been heard to declare that he had given more thought to these issues than his re-election campaign.⁸⁹

The Democratic primary was held on July 27. In the race for nomination for Representative from the Tenth District to the 80th Congress, Johnson received 789 Blanco County votes to Hardy Hollers' 191 and Charles King's 11. He run almost as strong in the other nine counties, carrying all of them and winning by a margin of 2½ to 1.⁹⁰

Although Johnson had won his second consecutive race for Congress since 1937 by a convincing margin, the personal attacks on him hurt. The hard-working Congressman had difficulty understanding his opponents' motives.⁹¹

Lyndon Johnson returned to Johnson City on Friday, August 30, for the opening of the Blanco County Fair and Rodeo. A heavy rain which failed to cut attendance or dampen the enthusiasm of a crowd, estimated at more than 5,000, caused postponement of the opening parade from the morning to the afternoon. Johnson, riding a horse, led the parade of cowboys, cowgirls, and floats. There was applause and cheers as the popular Congressman rode by. That evening Johnson made a speech at the grandstand.⁹²

The Republicans, unlike two years before when the Presidency was at stake, did not put up a candidate for the Tenth District seat. Lyndon Johnson was accordingly re-elected without opposition in the November 5 balloting. Not so successful were many of his Democratic colleagues in the House and Senate. The American people, disenchanted with President Truman, the New Deal, the demands of labor, and a residue of wartime economic controls, turned on the party of Franklin Roosevelt with a vengeance. The GOP for the first time in 13 years wrested control of both Houses of Congress from the Democrats.

6. Johnson Serves in the 80th Congress

When the 1st Session of the 80th Congress convened in Washington, on January 3, 1947, members of the parties caucused, and Joseph W. Martin, Jr., the Republican Minority Leader in the 79th Congress, was chosen Speaker. Sam Rayburn became his party's minority leader, while Carl Vinson was replaced as chairman of the House Naval Affairs Committee by its ranking Republican member.

Lyndon Johnson for the first time since his years on Congressman Richard Kleberg's staff found himself a member of the minority party on Capitol Hill. The acrimonious battles between President Truman and the Republican majorities led in the House by Speaker Martin and in the Senate by Robert A. Taft caused Johnson to question whether he ought to continue in politics. He, along with most Southern Democrats, voted for the Taft-Hartley Labor Act and against the President and the Union leaders. He rubbed salt in the wound by voting to override Truman's veto of the bill.

Soon after this struggle, in which Johnson earned the ire of labor and won support from conservatives, his wife gave birth, on July 3, at Washington's Garfield Hospital, to the couple's second child. Named Luci Baines, she weighed in at seven pounds.⁹³

In early August, Blanco County voters learned that the proud father had been assigned to the Joint-Committee on Atomic Energy, consisting of nine Senators and an equal number of Representatives. Editor Gliddon boasted, "this is one of the most important committees in Congress and Blanco County can be proud that she has a son worthy of such high recognition." Characteristically, Johnson had pledged to Commission Chairman David E. Lilienthal "every ounce of ability I possess for this new job." He at the same time continued his faithful service on the House Naval Affairs Committee of which he had been a member of since 1937.⁹⁴

On July 26, 1947, legislation to reorganize the War and Navy Departments into an expanded Department of Defense was signed into law by President Truman. Consequently, Lyndon Johnson was reassigned from the Naval Affairs Committee, which was discontinued, to the newly constituted House Armed Services Committee. As a member of that committee, Johnson led the fight for a 70-group Air Force, and to curtail the sale by the government of usable defense plants.⁹⁵ Both these measures were popular with his fellow Texans.

II. LYNDON JOHNSON AS TEXAS' JUNIOR SENATOR

A. Johnson Wins a Bitter Senatorial Campaign

1. He Declares His Candidacy

Nineteen hundred and forty-eight was a year that the Republican party believed its standard bearer would recapture the Presidency. In Texas there would be a race for the Senate seat which W. Lee O'Daniel was rumored to be ready to vacate after seven years. The conservative wing of the Texas Democratic party held most of the state and county offices, including the governor's. A number of men, who had backed Lyndon Johnson in previous races, were looking for a candidate to break the old guard's political monopoly.

When it was first reported that O'Daniel was not going to seek re-election, Coke Stevenson, who had retired from the governorship in January 1947, after nearly five and onehalf years in office, declared his candidacy. He hoped to replace O'Daniel in the Senate, as he had in August 1941 in the governor's chair. This compelled proJohnson and antiStevenson forces to take action. When these people, whose leaders included John Connally, Jake J. Pickle, and Stuart Long, cornered Lyndon Johnson, he was not enthusiastic. He had not forgotten the 1941 heartbreaking race against O'Daniel. He knew that Stevenson had twice swept to big victories in his 1942 and 44 elections to the governorship. The aura of LBJ's close association with Franklin Roosevelt was gone.

One night in Austin, Johnson's political friends coveredged on his home, a few days before the deadline date for filing. One of the participants recalled:

We talked and talked, trying to prove to him that we could beat Stevenson. We taunted him. We sweettalked him. We tried every argument any of us could think of. Lyndon just couldn't agree to run for the Senate.

The discussions continued after LBJ excused himself and went to bed. "We decided to run John Connally," one of the participants recalled:

This was 1948, remember. All the Connallys are tall and handsome. We were going to get surplus command cars, and put John and his father and brothers

in each of them and send them over the state, campaigning by public address systems on the cars.

Next morning was May 12, and they told "Lyndon that since he wouldn't run, we wanted him to help us elect John."¹

That afternoon, Johnson called a press conference in the penthouse of the Driskill Hotel, and declared himself a candidate for the United States Senate seat currently held by O'Daniel, who had defeated him by a whisker in June 1941. The announcement was not entirely unexpected. For several weeks it had been rumored that he was seriously considering tossing his Stetson in the ring.

An exciting campaign for the Democratic nomination was anticipated, because former Governor Coke Stevenson of Junction and George E. Peddy of Houston had previously declared themselves in the race. As yet, Senator O'Daniel had not revealed his plans, but many members of the press still expected him to run. In addition, there were eight declared minor candidates along for an ego trip.²

2. The First Campaign

Lyndon Johnson, even when it was confirmed that O'Daniel would not be a candidate, was confronted by an uphill fight. But, once the decision was made, he plunged into the fray with his characteristic hard work, energy, and careful planning. As always, his staff and its performance were outstanding.

A headquarters was organized and functioning within 48 hours. Claude C. Wild, who had managed LBJ's successful 1937 campaign, was in charge of the Austin office. He announced Johnson would open his canvass with "a speech in the open air Woolridge Park in Austin," on May 22.

Recalling past campaigns, Wild told the press that in 1937 he had recognized in Johnson "a young man of great promise, a fitting successor to the late J. P. Buchanan." In the 11 ensuing years, Johnson had vindicated his faith by becoming a premiere Representative, and Wild knew that his record as "Senator will be fully as outstanding."

Johnson with his record and the Southern voters' reverence for seniority could have retained his House seat for many more years with little or no opposition, Wild explained, but as Johnson had stated, "Texans don't have much patience with people who play only cinches; I think they are fed up with political has-beens who want to sit things out."

It was recalled that in 1941 Johnson had been defeated by only 1,311 votes. "I was urged to contest that election," Johnson recalled, but "I tried to be a good sport. Lots of folks said they'd support me next time but the war intervened. This is the first opportunity since 1941. I know that fair-minded people of Texas will help me win that position to which I came so close before."

Outlining the qualifications the office required, Johnson stated that the successful candidate "should be young enough to have energy for the work; levelheaded enough to be heard with respect; and with courage and independence to make his own decisions."³

Johnson in his Woodridge Park speech "straddled no fences and slung no mud," as he pitched his appeal to the times. From black-top roads and school teachers' pay to military preparedness and the future of the United States he "laid it on the line." An optimistic program calling for "preparedness, peace, and progress" was outlined.⁴

This speech failed to generate any great outpouring of support, and was soon forgotten "in the general political confusion" and infighting. Then what had happened in 1937 at the end of the campaign occurred at the beginning this time. Johnson was felled by a kidney infection. He was flown to the Mayo Clinic in Rochester, Minnesota, by his good friend aviatrix Jacqueline Cockran. The trip to the hospital cost him more than a week of campaigning.⁵

While in the hospital Lyndon Johnson had plenty of time for thinking. He noted the increasingly belligerent attitude of the Soviet Union behind the iron curtain in Eastern Europe. Correctly gauging the voters' pulse, he seized on preparedness as a prime issue in the Texas political free for all. He presented himself as the most experienced candidate in the field of military affairs. He conveyed the impression that he was the only senatorial aspirant who had never been tainted with isolationism.

Johnson also hammered away at the need for more than \$31 per month for old age pensioners; the need for more water conservation and better soil management; and the⁶ need for an energetic Lyndon Johnson to represent Texans in the Senate.

To enable Johnson to recoup the time lost in the hospital, a veterans' group supporting his election offered to lease a helicopter for 20 days.

While arrangements for use of the helicopter were being perfected, Johnson stumped the state, demanding that his opponents explain what they stood for. In his speeches, the 39-year-old Johnson pointed out that hundreds of miles of black-top farm to market roads had been built in the Tenth District during his 11 years as its Representative. "As your Senator," he stated, "we'll build thousands of miles of them in Texas."

He pointed with justifiable pride to the 20,000 rural Tenth District homes which had electricity, and promised, "as Senator, we'll put lights in every rural home in Texas."

Speaking of soil and water conservation, the Congressman said, "We have a program for every acre of land in our district. As your Senator, we will save the soil and water in every district."

He advocated a modern hospital for every Texas county, federal housing assistance, and support for the bill giving federal aid for teachers' salaries. Johnson assured his listeners that the latter bill, as drafted by

Senator Taft of Ohio, did not give the federal bureaucrats any control over local schools, a sensitive issue in Texas and the South where schools were segregated.

In late June, some four weeks before the primary, the state leadership of the American Federation of Labor endorsed Coke Stevenson, an action that surprised LBJ, as much as it did many other Texans. Johnson's long association with Franklin Roosevelt and the New Deal, had led most observers to assume that he would be labor's first choice. Johnson's support of the Taft-Hartley Labor Reform Act, however, had made him anathema for the time being to the czars of organized labor.

Johnson got a lot of mileage out of labor's endorsement of Stevenson. Several times daily he would ask from the stump whether the former governor had made a secret agreement with the bosses to attempt, if elected, to secure repeal of the Taft-Hartley Law.

By the beginning of the third week of June, Johnson had his helicopter, christened The Johnson City Windmill. As the first candidate in history to campaign in this fashion, Johnson won new friends, as he carried his "lively campaign . . . to the 'forks-of-the-creek.'" He stumped through East Texas' piney woods in his helicopter, meeting the voters "in-out-of-the-way places."

Johnson, in carrying his message to the people, landed on courthouse squares, baseball fields, or in pastures and vacant lots to "meet folks who haven't seen a candidate for U.S. Senator" in years. "I like to get out and be with the people," Johnson told the press, "Texans don't want a Senator who is afraid to leave air conditioned hotel rooms and speak to" them.

Johnson did not forget his homefolks as he hopped across the vast state. On Saturday, July 3 at 5:30 P.M., The Johnson City Windmill landed west of Johnson City in Ohlen Cox's pasture. Out stepped Johnson and his pilot, to be met by an eager crowd. They had flown over from Kerrville, where LBJ had adressed hundreds.

As a storm was approaching, Johnson's speech was brief, and he spent most of his time greeting friends. They were told that his campaign was "progressing nicely and he was pleased with the large number of enthusiastic supporters over the state."

Waving to the crowd, Johnson reboarded his helicopter and the pilot took off. Before the people could get into their cars and pickups, a down-pour commenced.

As to be expected, Blanco County friends had rallied to Johnson's support. On June 2 a number of ladies drove to Austin to attend the Women's Lyndon B. Johnson for Senator rally in the Mural Room of the Stephen F. Austin Hotel. Miss Mamie Klett was spokesman for the local delegation.

On their return, the ladies reported that there was a large crowd in attendance and much enthusiasm.

While Lyndon Johnson stumped the state, exhausting his staff as they sought to keep pace, Lady Bird Johnson, although she had not yet conquered her natural shyness, tried her hand at asking strangers to vote for her spouse. On motoring about, whether on personal errands or to meet with women's groups, she bought only five gallons of gasoline at a time, so she would have an excuse to stop at more filling stations to ask the attendants to vote for Lyndon Johnson. Mary Rather recalled that one day she and Mrs. Johnson drove through East Texas on a "fivegallon" tour. When they reached their day's second gasoline stop, Mrs. Johnson turned to Mary and said, "Mary, you ask them this time, I just can't do it again."¹²

3. Johnson Runs Second

Texas Democrats went to the polls on Saturday, July 24. With no county contests to spark interest, only about two-thirds of those qualified to vote in Blanco County went to the polls. Principal interest understandably focused on the race for United States Senator, with Johnson outdistancing his rivals five to one. Johnson received 694 votes, Peddy 38, Stevenson 179, and Alford 1.¹³

State-wide Johnson polled 405,617 votes, Coke Stevenson 477,077, and the other candidates 320,000. No one having received 50 percent of the ballots cast as required, the two candidates having the most votes, Johnson and Stevenson, would meet in a runoff election for the Democratic nomination to be held on Saturday, August 28.¹⁴

Lyndon Johnson, before plunging into the second primary, took time out from his work in Washington to say "thank you" to his Tenth District friends for their support in the first primary.

"There's nothing more encouraging to a man than to know that the people he has lived with and worked with all his life are for him." In the July 24 voting, he had carried the ten Tenth District counties, receiving two out of every three area votes cast.

"I'll always be proud of the majority," he wrote, "I'll be proud and thankful for the fine people who have been so loyal and helpful during the years I have been their Congressman."

He had just one more favor to ask of his constituents:

I hope my friends in the district will again unite with all their uncles and aunts, brothers and sisters, and friends outside the district between now and August 28 and ask them to vote for Lyndon B. Johnson in the run off.

If we work together now as we have in the past, the Tenth District will have a Senator of its own.¹⁵

4. The Second Campaign Brings a Change in Tactics

By the time the run-off campaign kicked off, the international situation in Europe had deteriorated. The Red Army had clamped a blockade on routes leading from West Germany across the Soviet zone to Berlin. The draft had been resumed. A stronger national defense posture, such as Johnson had called for in the first campaign, became even more popular with Texans. Johnson planned to abandon his helicopter as being too slow for a threeweek campaign. He would travel to the major Texas cities by commercial airlines.¹⁶

Lyndon Johnson opened his campaign in the run-off at Center, deep in East Texas, on August 6.

As to be expected, Johnson's Blanco County friends again rallied to his support. On August 4 Mayor Jimmy Leonard of Johnson City issued a proclamation:

Whereas the citizens of Johnson City, Texas, are justly proud of its native son, Lyndon B. Johnson, . . . [I] do declare August 11, Lyndon B. Johnson day: that all business on such day in the city of Johnson City, Texas, shall be suspended; that all citizens of this city who possibly can shall on such day assemble at the courthouse square at 8 o'clock A.M. for the purpose of forming a automobile caravan which will travel through the day to as many cities as time will permit, in the interest of telling other people of Texas about our able congressman, and in interest of placing Lyndon B. Johnson ¹⁷ in the senate of the United States.

Consequently, early on Wednesday morning, the 11th, a crowd assembled in the courthouse square. Those willing to take their cars on the caravan had previously contacted either Melvin Winters or Miss Nancy Baurele, and, at 8 o'clock, 50 cars left Johnson City filled with Johnson supporters. At Blanco, the caravan, led by a car with loudspeakers, followed by a school bus with the Marble Falls band, was reinforced by more cars.

The first stop for the day was at New Braunfels in Comal County. There were cheers as the caravan, the cars, gaily decorated with "Lyndon Johnson for Senator" placards, motored into the city. While the band played, the cars stopped and Johnson partisans got out and distributed campaign literature and personally contacted as many people as possible on behalf of their favorite.

From New Braunfels, the caravan traveled to Seguin, Gonzales, Shiner, Moulton, and Flatonia, where they campaigned in the same fashion. It was long after dark when the tired campaigners returned to their homes in the Hill Country.¹⁸

Lyndon Johnson, to express his appreciation for what the homefolks had done in his behalf, addressed a letter to W. H. Miller, editor of the Record-Courier. In this letter, which was printed on page one of the August 19 edition, Johnson thanked his "kind friends from my home county who . . . paid our race its highest tribute we have yet received in this campaign." Reports received at his Austin headquarters told how the "fine Blanco County folks sacrificed a day of hard work to bring our message to our neighbors to the south." They would "never know how deeply I appreciate your volunteer work in putting together the biggest caravan yet seen in this senate race." They had made headlines all over Texas, which have "made us votes all over the state."¹⁹

Encouraged by the response to their first sortie and Johnson's words, Blanco County supporters organized a second caravan on Friday, the 27th, the day before the run-off. This motorcade likewise assembled in the courthouse square in Johnson City, at 7:30 A.M., and started for San Marcos thirty minutes later. En route, it was reinforced by several carloads of Blanco residents. At San Marcos they rendezvoused with Johnson enthusiasts from that city and other parts of the Tenth District. The caravan then proceeded to San Antonio and, after "parading" through the city, parked. Several hours were spent contacting prospective voters, before attending a giant rally addressed by their hero.²⁰

5. The Family Works for Lyndon

Lyndon's brother Sam Houston, one of his principal campaign advisors, was satisfied that LBJ's vote for the Taft-Hartley Law had compromised his position with labor. In the first campaign, Texas labor leaders had worked against Johnson.

The labor vote in Texas was not vital to success, and Coke Stevenson sought to straddle the fence. He accepted labor's support without committing himself on Taft-Hartley. Jack Anderson decided to smoke out Stevenson and wrote an article under Drew Pearson's byline, attacking Stevenson's "wishy-washy evasiveness." When asked by the Texas press to comment on the Taft-Hartley Act, Stevenson replied that "he didn't have his notes with him and therefore couldn't answer the question." This statement, which was widely publicized, hurt Stevenson.²¹

Johnson's family was again active in his campaign. On August 27 his mother, assisted by Rebekah Johnson Bobbitt and Lucia Johnson Alexander, in a successful effort to canvass Austin by telephone tore apart a phone book. Each then took a section and "tore their index fingers to the bone dialing one number after another," in Lyndon's behalf. Such dedication would be vital.²²

6. Lyndon Johnson Ekes Out a Victory

Texas Democratic voters again went to the polls on the 28th. Recalling 1941, Johnson had poll watchers at every ballot box. He heeded Ma Ferguson's warning about "certain counties with a high corpse count." Blanco County, as always, gave Johnson a thumping majority, 964 votes to 292 for Coke Stevenson. State-wide the race was neck and neck, the closest any political columnist could recall. First, Stevenson would edge into the lead and then Johnson. At 1 A.M., on the 29th, Stevenson led by 854 votes out of the one million tabulated. The next day Johnson led by 693 votes. On the last day of August, tabulations showed Stevenson back in the lead. When the Record-Courier went to press on September 2, the situation was depressing. Stevenson led by 349 votes and appeared to be the winner. But, Editor Miller informed his readers, "The outcome, however, is not assured until the official count is in . . . , and the outcome may be changed and then the convention will have to accept the vote."²³

By midnight on the 2d, Johnson had closed the gap to 17 votes. A week after the election, Johnson's total placed him on top by 162 ballots.

When Johnson took the lead, Stevenson and some of his supporters headed for Jim Wells County in South Texas to check on what they claimed were stuffed ballot boxes. On doing so, they announced that in Box 13, 203 votes had been added to the Johnson total after the polls had closed. They asked for a court order to change the Box 13 returns and expunge the alleged irregularities. Johnson partisans promptly defended the returns in court and secured an injunction forbidding any alterations in the Box 13 total.

Johnson, in a state-wide broadcast, recalled his 1941 campaign, when corrections and changes had erased his lead and gave the Senate seat to O'Daniel. "All I want is justice" he declared, "The accurate, official returns will show that I am the winner."

The final authority in determining and certifying the victor would be the party itself. Both sides prepared to present their case before the State Democratic Executive Committee, which would meet in Fort Worth's Blackstone Hotel on September 13, the day before the state convention.

Chairman Robert W. Calvert called the committee to order in the ball-room crowded with reporters, committee members, and partisan spectators. Secretary Vann M. Kennedy read the majority and minority reports, the former showing that Lyndon B. Johnson had received 494,191 votes and Coke Stevenson 494,104. The minority report, after throwing out Box 13, had Stevenson the winner by a whisker.

Excitement mounted as spokesmen for the two candidates presented their cases. Both Lyndon Johnson and Coke Stevenson were present, seated a few feet apart, and listening intently. After hearing all the arguments, Chairman Calvert ordered Secretary Kennedy to call the roll.

Each of the 31 districts had two representatives, with one vote apiece. At first, it seemed that Johnson was in serious trouble, as the vote to purge

the returns from Box 13 stood 21 to 10, with less than one-half the districts to be polled. Then came a number of pro-Johnson votes. And by the time the 31st District had voted, the count stood at 29 to 28 for Johnson. Then, Mrs. Seth Dorbrandt of Conroe changed her vote from "Aye" for accepting the majority report to "Present." This made the tally 28 to 28. Chairman Calvert prepared to declare a tie vote, which would bring the question before the convention's 2,000 delegates the next day.

One of the committeemen, Charles Gibson of Amarillo, a Johnson supporter, had been reported absent to Sam Houston Johnson. Recalling that when last seen Gibson was headed for an upstairs men's room, Sam started in pursuit. He found Gibson in the lavatory soaking his head in a wash basin. Sam yelled, "Get back in the committee room. We need your damned vote!"

Gibson hastily dried his face and, returning to the ballroom, called out, "Mr. Chairman, Mr. Chairman, I'm Charlie Gibson from Amarillo, and I vote 'Aye!'"

Whereupon, Chairman Calvert banged his gavel and announced the vote as 29 to 28 in favor of acceptance of the majority report. This gave LBJ the senatorial nomination by 87 votes.²⁴

On September 14 the convention convened in the Will Rogers auditorium. The first question to be settled focused on seating of rival delegations. This had surfaced because of the split in the Democratic Party over a strong civil rights plank in the platform adopted by the National Convention. This had led to a walkout by several delegations from the Deep South. The National Convention had then nominated Harry Truman and Senator Alben Barkley of Kentucky as its Presidential and Vice Presidential candidates. The anticivil rights plank Democrats, dubbed Dixiecrats, named Governor J. Strom Thurmond of South Carolina and Governor Fielding Wright of Mississippi, as their standard bearers for these offices.

At the Fort Worth convention, Texas Democrats were called upon to resolve the dispute between hostile delegations from Houston, one of which refused to take a loyalty oath to support Truman and Barkley. If the Dixiecrats were seated, the Stevenson forces' chance of getting the convention to reverse the decision of the executive committee would be enhanced.

A roll call vote resulted in the pro-Truman delegation being seated. After Democratic loyalists had been named to key convention positions, the delegates gave a ringing endorsement to the executive committee's report. Lyndon Johnson was declared the party's nominee for U.S. Senator in November's General Election.

When called to the podium, Johnson made a few remarks, noting, "I intend to spend the next six years making Texas as good a United States Senator as I can possibly become."²⁵

The Stevenson forces did not give up. Securing affidavits from residents of Jim Wells County alleging voting frauds, they presented them

before the United States District Court in Austin. Judge T. Whitfield Davidson ruled that they had proved their case. Johnson then hired his friend Abe Fortas to represent him, and appealed to the United States Supreme Court. After studying the briefs, Associate Justice Hugo Black threw the case out, contending it was outside the jurisdiction of the federal courts.²⁶

7. Johnson Sweeps into Office

Lyndon Johnson was not elected yet, however. In the November election he faced two candidates, Republican Jack Porter and Prohibitionist Sam Morris. Normally, the Republican opposition would have been classed in the same category as the Prohibitionists, but the run-off with its disputed returns had embittered Coke Stevenson. Unlike Johnson in 1941, who had quietly accepted defeat in an election that was almost as close, Stevenson endorsed Porter, a former Democrat and Houston millionaire, and called for LBJ's defeat. The campaigning was bitter, with charges²⁷ of fraud, and Johnson referred to by his opponents as "Landslide Lyndon."

When Texas voters went to the polls for the third time that year, on November 2, Johnson was elected to the United States Senate by a majority of more than two to one. Locally, Blanco County gave Johnson his habitual whopping majority, 1,221 to 440, while Gillespie, a Republican Island, supported Porter by a vote of 2,941 to 484. Down in South Texas, the much disputed Box 13, in Jim Wells County, "stuck by its guns and gave Johnson a overwhelming majority."²⁸

Lyndon Johnson had barely missed fulfilling a prediction made by his Grandfather Big Sam Johnson back in 1908, "I have a mighty fine grandson, smart as you find them. I expect him to be United States Senator before he is forty."²⁹

Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson following the election took their first vacation in more than a year, traveling to El Paso. They, however, limited it to 72 hours, because they wished to personally answer the thousands of congratulatory letters and telegrams.

Mrs. Johnson, in thanking their Johnson City supporters, wrote, "Lyndon and I are very grateful for all the letters our friends have taken the time to write. We want everybody to continue writing to us in Washington, passing along suggestions and criticisms that will help us serve the people better."³⁰

B. Johnson's First Years as a Senator

1. The Korean Conflict Gives Him an Opportunity

Harry Truman, although counted out by the pundits and the Gallup Poll, had made a whistle-stop campaign across the Nation. His "give 'em hell, Harry," oratory undercut the bland approach to the American people made by the overconfident Republican nominees Thomas E. Dewey of New York and Earl Warren of California. When the American people awoke on the morning of November 3, they found that Truman and Barkley had been

elected. Not only had the Democrats retained the Presidency, but they had recaptured both houses of Congress. Thus, Lyndon Johnson, although a junior senator, would be a member of the majority party.

He was in Washington on January 3, 1949, when President Pro Tem Kenneth D. McKeller of Tennessee convened the Senate for the 1st Session of the 81st Congress. After being sworn in as Texas' junior senator, he was named to the prestigious Armed Services Committee, chaired by Senator Richard Russell of Georgia.

In September 1949 Senator Johnson authored an article for a syndicated column carried by a number of Texas newspapers. The topic chosen by Johnson was one that would be popular with many of his constituents, but fraught with danger as it effected the economic well being of many Texans, as well as national security.

His column focused on the economy drive inaugurated by President Truman's Secretary of Defense Louis Johnson. The Secretary, LBJ pointed out, had "made history--and enemies--two weeks ago when he pared 137,000 government workers" from the Pentagon payroll. His action marked the first occasion since the end of World War II that an agency of the federal government had "voluntarily dismissed so many workers for no other reason than to save the tax-payers' dollars."

Secretary Johnson had estimated that this August reduction in force would save one-half billion dollars, and he had told Congress that the goal of his economy drive was to save double that figure.

Ordinarily, Lyndon Johnson wrote, it might be expected that the Secretary would be applauded and acclaimed for what he had done. "Nothing has been sought more diligently, promised more often, or demanded more firmly than 'economy in government.' Everybody is in favor of it, they say, and nobody is opposed to it."

But, LBJ continued, Secretary Johnson is not being hailed as a "hero" for what he has done. He has put himself in "the uneviable position of saving more dollars and losing more friends in a single day than any other public official in years."

The Secretary's efforts to economize had reached into nearly all 48 states. A number of military installations had been closed, and workers in cities and towns hundreds of miles from Washington found themselves suddenly unemployed. This apparently was not the "kind of economy most of the loud-spoken economy advocates desired," the Senator chided, "they have received Secretary Johnson's action coolly and even angerily."

The truth, LBJ admonished, "is that economy is like castor oil--everybody prescribes it for the other fellow, and nobody takes it unless it is forced down.

"Louis Johnson poured a stiff dose of castor oil down a lot of people, and he didn't provide any orange juice to kill the taste."

Personally, LBJ hoped "Secretary Johnson will hand out more doses of the same medicine and that other officials will take courage and do likewise. The only sane way to cut government expenditures is to economize first and explain later.

"From my own experience, I have found that the greatest obstacle to economy is oftentimes the group of people who wail the loudest and longest for economy," Senator Johnson lectured.³¹

Secretary Johnson's economy drive, which Senator Johnson had championed, boomeranged on June 25, 1950, when North Korea took advantage of the Nation's weakened defense posture to launch a savage invasion of South Korea. United States forces, their strength sapped by cut backs in the military establishment, engaged the aggressor. After less than five years, the country was again at war.

The Korean Conflict gave the hard-working junior senator from Texas an opportunity to impress his colleagues with his ability. In July, Senator Russell named Johnson chairman of the Preparedness Investigation Subcommittee of the Senate Armed Services Committee, the 1951 "version of the war-investigating body" headed by then Senator Truman in World War II. Almost overnight the subcommittee became headline news, with Lyndon Johnson "relentlessly" questioning witness³² after witness about price gouging, waste of manpower, surplus scandals, etc.

In Washington, Johnson was given the major share of the credit for keeping the investigations non-partisan and "devoid of a circus atmosphere." As a military-oriented senator, Johnson called for all-out mobilization. When it did not come, he made a speech titled, "Delay-Defeat-Retreat," in which he needled the administration. When nothing much resulted, and Red China intervened with disastrous consequences for the United Nations' forces, Johnson, on December 12, warned his fellow senators against the "adolescent nonsense" of the government's "makeshift mobilization." Several editorials, commenting on this speech, termed his "sweeping concept of coming global-defense problems 'inspired'."

Eric Sevareid, a popular radio commentator, referred to Johnson as "the people's advocate."³⁴

2. Johnson Becomes the Democratic Whip

As to be anticipated, with the United States again involved in a foreign war, the November congressional elections went against the administration. The Democratic majority in the Senate was sliced from 12 to 2 and in the House from 92 to 40. Among the Democratic casualties in the Senate were Majority Leader Scott Lucas of Illinois defeated by Everett Dickson and Whip Francis Myers of Pennsylvania ousted by James H. Duff. When the Democrats caucused to pick their leader for the 1st Session of the 82d Congress, they chose a veteran of ten years in the chamber, Ernest W. McFarland of Arizona. The vote was 30 to 19. They then selected Lyndon B. Johnson as their Whip, or assistant majority leader. His election was by acclamation, and resulted after³⁵ Senator John Sparkman of Alabama withdrew his name from consideration.

As the Whip, it was LBJ's task to maintain close liaison with the Democratic senators to determine their positions on key issues and relay it to Majority Leader McFarland. Such information would enable McFarland to make effective decisions on the Senate's business.³⁶

In February 1951 Colliers Magazine carried an article featuring Lyndon B. Johnson. Calling its readers' attention to this issue of Colliers, the Record-Courier noted that Washington correspondent Leslie E. Carpenter had broached the possibility of Lyndon B. Johnson being nominated by the Democrats as their Vice Presidential candidate in 1952, in addition to giving "a complete story on his political achievements and advancements." Editor Gliddon, in recommending the article to her readers, described it "as well written and one of the most accurate ever given to the public. While praise was plentiful absolutely no misrepresentation" was given.

To the people of Johnson City, who had known LBJ since childhood, it was a review of the "good things that have come his way." All these "good things" were the result of hard work, but, the editor continued, Carpenter had failed to mention one important aspect, "Lyndon Johnson never forgets a friend."³⁷

A second weekly, the popular Saturday Evening Post, on May 19, 1951, featured Lyndon Johnson. On reading the article by Paul F. Healy, Hill Country readers learned that their junior senator had the "perfect personality" for Capitol Hill: "a grass-roots hominees blended with just enough city sophistication."

His personal charm, they learned, had won him friends on both sides of the aisle. Recently, Republican Floor Leader Kenneth Wherry of Nebraska, yielding to Johnson's persuasion in connection with a bill to protect West Texas long staple cotton, had remarked, "I'd rather do business with you than anyone else on your side."

The greatest part of Johnson's success, Healy attributed to his tremendous drive for hard work and "the willingness with which he uses it."

Besides looking out for the interests of his constituents, Healy continued, "Johnson functions as the Democratic Whip in the Senate, a post in which he acts as assistant majority leader." He also was a member of the Senate's strategy-planning Democratic Policy Committee, and the Armed Services and Interstate Commerce Committees.

Until outbreak of the Korean Conflict, 11 months before, Lyndon Johnson had been "content to limit his speeches" and tally votes in the cloak room, but now that had changed. He had made "several penetrating and timely talks on the government's makeshift mobilization" that had been well received.

Like Colliers, Saturday Evening Post mentioned the possibility of Lyndon Johnson becoming the Democratic nominee for Vice President in 1952.³⁸

Senator Johnson spent Tuesday, November 7, 1951, touring Blanco County ranches and farms, as a member of the caravan organized by W. M. McDonald, administrative officer of the County Production Marketing Association and his staff. Invitations to join the tour and see what PMA was doing had been sent to Senator Johnson, Tenth District Congressman Homer Thornberry, state and district officers of PMA, and to farmers and ranchers in Blanco and adjoining counties.

When the caravan left the courthouse square, it consisted of 40 cars and about 150 people. Noon found the caravan at the Melvin Winters ranch, where the group attended a barbecue sponsored jointly by Mr. Winters and the Johnson City Chamber of Commerce. On the menu were choice beef barbecued, ranch-style beans, potato salad, pickles, onions, bread, and coffee.

Following the meal, a loud-speaker was hooked up, and with Bob McKinney acting as master of ceremonies, Representative Thornberry was introduced. Referring to Lyndon Johnson, Thornberry told his audience that Blanco County must be proud of "their native son who has gone so far in National Affairs."

Senator Johnson was then presented. His voice rang out loud and clear when he exclaimed, "It is good to be back home. I love to stomp over the hills and rocks I stubbed my toes on as a boy. More than this, I love to mingle with the best friends a man ever had."

He commented on the many advantages made possible to farmers and ranchers through the Production Marketing Association and similar agencies, the coming of REA to the Hill Country, and the general prosperity of the Nation. His remarks regarding the Korean Conflict were limited. But, in closing, he told his listeners, "We, none of us, know what the future has in store for any of us. We do not know whether or not we will be alive in another year. But one thing is certain, if an atomic war comes, these men of the soil will have the best chance to escape that dreadful weapon."

There was a round of applause as Johnson stepped away from the loud-speaker. After several other talks, the caravan proceeded to the Carl Smith ranch, where it disbanded.³⁹

Senator Johnson, although he and his family still called Austin home, spent considerable time at his Stonewall Ranch during the weeks following the October adjournment of the 1st Session of the 82d Congress. On Thursday, January 3, 1952, Lyndon Johnson, accompanied by State Representative A. W. Moursund and Melvin Winters of Blanco County, spent several hours in Fredericksburg. For dinner, Johnson was a guest of the supervisors of six Soil Conservation Districts at the Sunnyside Tavern. Speaking informally after the meal, the Senator told the group, "Soil conservation work in the United States is second only in importance to the work the boys in Korea are doing." The United States, he continued, must put forth every effort to prevent our soil from depreciating to the extent that it has in China. "We are making progress, but we must not lag or we will suffer if erosion continues at the present rate."

Practicing what he preached, Johnson then signed a conservation agreement for his ranch. Conservation projects undertaken in the 10 months since he had acquired title included "sloping and filling" two large gullies, thus changing them into "wide flat waterways seeded in rye and vetch." The worse of these gullies had extended the length of the ranch, nearly a mile, and had been the source of erosions in the terraced fields to the east and west.

Senator Johnson reported that 70 acres of the ranch were seeded in small grain cover crops and another 20 acres in Madrid clover. During the forthcoming spring, 135 additional acres would be plowed and planted in Hubam clover. In 1953 this latter acreage would be seeded in grass.

Brush had been cleared from 35 acres of bottom land and along the Pedernales, and a mixture of rye and Kentucky fescue planted.⁴⁰

Two days later, on Saturday, Senator Johnson and his family returned from Austin to Washington for the convening of the 2d Session of the 82d Congress on Tuesday, January 8.⁴¹

C. The National Nominating Conventions Make Their Choices

Nineteen hundred and fifty-two was a Presidential election year. Meeting in Chicago, the Republicans, sensing victory, selected Gen. Dwight D. Eisenhower and a young senator from California, Richard M. Nixon, as their candidates for President and Vice President. The Democratic National Convention convened in the "Windy City" on July 21, ten days after the Republicans adjourned. President Truman had declared himself out of the race, and a donnybrook between the liberal and conservative wings of the party was anticipated.

In the days before the convention, Lyndon Johnson worked closely with Speaker Rayburn, who was slated to be permanent chairman. Between them, they managed to settle for the time being a contest between rival Texas delegations. They arranged for recognition of the faction led by Governor Allan Shivers. This was an effort on the part of Rayburn and Johnson to compromise the long-standing schism between the Texas conservatives headed by the governor, and the liberals, who feared the others would bolt the party in the forthcoming presidential campaign.

At Chicago, the Democrats on the third ballot tapped Governor Adlai Stevenson of Illinois as their Presidential candidate. They then, as a sop to the southern wing, nominated Senator John Sparkman of Alabama for Vice President. When Stevenson announced his opposition to Texas' claim to ownership of the tidelands and the oil beneath, most of the Texas state Democratic hierarchy declared for Eisenhower. Lyndon Johnson and Sam Rayburn, although voicing strong support⁴² for Texas' claim to the tidelands, remained loyal to Stevenson and Sparkman.

D. The September 1952 Flood

Mary Rather worked in the Senator's Austin office during the long congressional recess. On September 11 Lyndon Johnson was scheduled to fly

from San Antonio to the Rio Grande Valley to make a speech. As Mrs. Johnson was not feeling well, LBJ called Mary and asked her to come out to the Ranch and keep Lady Bird company while he was away. Miss Rather arrived at Stonewall late that afternoon. Soon thereafter, it began to rain very hard. It was still coming down the next morning, when Mary drove Johnson to San Antonio to board his commercial flight to the Valley.

Upon returning to Stonewall, she found the Pedernales flooding, and she could not cross to the Ranch side of the river. She telephoned Mrs. Johnson, explaining that she would attempt to cross the Pedernales near Fredericksburg. By the time she reached this bridge, it, too, was closed to traffic. Mary Rather next drove to Johnson City, and tried and failed to contact A.W. Moursund and Melvin Winters. After telephoning Mrs. Johnson and reporting that she was unable to reach the Ranch, Mary drove to Austin. By the hour she reached her home, telephone communications between Austin and Johnson City and Stonewall were interrupted.⁴³

Five-year-old Luci was alone at the Ranch with her mother. Her sister, Lynda, had caught the school bus to Johnson City, where she was enrolled in the second grade. Luci was delighted with this situation, because it was a rare event when she found herself along with one of her parents.

As the rain continued to beat down, Luci sensed that "Mother was becoming concerned." This was unusual, because her mother rarely showed any worry. After the telephone line failed, and the river continued to surge upward, Mrs. Johnson began to fret about Lynda. She was concerned least the school authorities attempt to bus her to Stonewall. They did not, and Lynda spent the night in Johnson City with Ohlen and Ava Johnson Cox.

A cow took refuge in the Johnsons' yard, and Mrs. Johnson and Luci sought to drive her out. "Mother," Luci recalled, "spoke of saddling the horse and fleeing to higher ground." This excited Luci. Sometime during the day, Cousin Oreale Bailey, driven from her house by the raging Pedernales, came sloshing up the road in her boots. Since Cousin Oreale always seemed ageless, she reminded Luci of a specter. Other neighbors likewise sought refuge at the Ranch house, and were served Campbell's cream of tomato soup and cheese sandwiches by Mrs. Johnson, while waiting for the flood to crest.

About this time, Luci, who had been terribly excited by what she saw, began to realize the seriousness of what was happening.⁴⁴

Late that afternoon, Lyndon Johnson returned from the Valley, landing at the Wesley West Ranch, near Marble Falls. There, he boarded a light plane, which landed him near the Ranch. The return of her father to rescue them made a lasting impression on Luci.⁴⁵

Early the next morning Mary Rather motored out to the Ranch. The rain had ceased and the flood crest had subsided. It made her heartsick to see all the uprooted pecans and oaks as she approached the Johnsons' house.

Mrs. Johnson told Mary that before the Pedernales began to fall, it had edged to within a few feet of the front yard fence.

Their home, as it stood on higher ground than some of the neighbors' dwellings, had been a haven of refuge. The sight of the debris and up-rooted oaks and pecans made Luci shudder. Her parents and their friends and neighbors had worked hard and now the horrid flood had caused untold damage and suffering.⁴⁶

The record Pedernales flood caused an estimated \$1,500,000 damage in Gillespie County. At Stonewall, where between 23 and 24 inches of rain fell, the Pedernales rose 40 feet. Downstream from the Johnsons, rapidly rising waters drove the Walter Baag, Emil Neffendorf, and Albert Everett families from their homes. The Baags, who lived in the Sam Ealy Johnson house, were awakened "to find floodwaters swirling across their yard." A decision to remain in the house nearly cost them their lives, as the water rose rapidly and soon covered the floor. It continued to inch upward. Soon the furniture was floating, and the terrified couple climbed onto the dining table. The water was within several feet of the ceiling, when the river crested and began to fall. The Baags thus escaped being drowned, but the experience so unnerved them that they hurriedly moved off the property. At Ernest Hodges' surging water reached the curb in front of their home.

On the Johnson Ranch, the West Quarters occupied by Julian Matus was flooded and his car and butane tank swept downstream. The Senator's new dam and low water crossing withstood the flood, though the approaches on either side were badly eroded by the rampaging river. A number of his bottom land fences were seriously damaged.⁴⁷

III. SENATOR JOHNSON BECOMES THE SECOND MOST POWERFUL MAN IN WASHINGTON

A. Johnson Becomes Minority Leader in the 83d Congress

The Nation's voters went to the polls on November 4, 1952. Disenchanted with the Truman administration, corruption in Washington, and the Korean Conflict, they elected Dwight Eisenhower President by a whopping electoral vote. The Republicans likewise captured both houses of Congress. For the first time since 1930, the GOP would control two of the three branches of the federal government. In addition, Lyndon B. Johnson would soon be Texas' senior senator, as Tom Connally had decided to retire after 34 years in Congress. His replacement was Price Daniel.

The Johnsons spent their first Christmas at the Ranch. Lynda Bird and Luci Baines gathered with their parents and relatives around the tree for the "traditional observance of Christmas eve." The 1st Session of the 83d Congress was scheduled to convene on January 3, 1953, and Lyndon Johnson headed back to Washington on December 26. Mrs. Johnson and the girls left Texas to join him on January 1.¹

When the 47 Democratic senators caucused on Saturday, the 3d, Senator McFarland was among the missing, he having been defeated in his bid for re-election by Barry Goldwater. The most influential Senate Democrats, headed by Richard Russell and Walter George of Georgia, decided to push LBJ for the post of Minority Leader in the 83d Congress. With their backing he was chosen for this difficult position. As Minority Leader, Johnson, not yet 45, became the ranking Democrat in the Senate. His rapid rise surprised many observers, because in the 81st and 82d Congresses he had headed no committees. Now, however, he moved into a position of Senate power as chairman of the Democratic Conference, the Democratic Policy Committee, and Democratic Steering Committee.²

The close division between the two parties in the 83d Congress (48 Republicans, 47 Democrats, and 1 Independent in the Senate, and 221 Republicans, 211 Democrats, and 1 Independent in the House) could have spelled trouble. If the Democratic leadership had desired, they could have frustrated the legislative process. But Senator Johnson and House Democratic Minority Leader Rayburn agreed that the Nation's interest dictated that this danger be avoided. "They know intimately the state of peril that existed in the world and knew that the United States Government, as the leader of the non-Communist nations, must not be weakened at the top by bitter partisan fighting."

Johnson's relations with the Majority Leader, Senator Robert A. Taft of Ohio, were correct as befitted the two party leaders in the Senate. On several occasions, Mr. Republican, as Taft was called, went out of his way

to compliment Johnson "on his fairness and honorable restraint in dealing" with the Eisenhower administration. After Taft's death on July 31, 1953, Johnson's relations with the new Majority Leader, William Knowland of California, were equally amiable.

While on a speaking tour through Texas, Johnson, in explaining this philosophy, told his audience, "If you're in an airplane flying somewhere, you don't run up to the cockpit and attack the pilot. Mr. Eisenhower is the only President we've got. We just help him where we can."

Aided by this good will and support, President Eisenhower on July 27 brought the Korean Conflict to a close, when an armistice was signed at Panmunjom.

B. Death Claims A Family Friend--Judge Stubbs

On January 9, 1953, Nat Stubbs, a close friend of the Johnsons and an influential member of the Johnson City Community, died in the Blanco hospital, after an illness of several years.

Born in DeWitt County on May 5, 1866, Stubbs had been brought by his parents to Blanco County two years later, where he grew up on a ranch. He attended Blanco High School from which he graduated in 1888. "Eager to impart some of the learning he had received," Stubbs applied for a position as teacher in the Johnson City School. He was "elected" by the Board of Trustees, and he and another teacher constituted the faculty in 1890. For the first two years, Stubbs "struggled along in an old frame building with inadequate facilities for even a grammar grade school." In 1896 Stubbs, having read law, secured a license to practice. Resigning as principal-teacher of the Johnson City School, he entered into a law partnership with Joseph W. Baines. The firm was respected and its services much sought after. At Baines' death in 1906, Baines & Stubbs was one of the top legal firms in the Hill Country.

After his marriage to Julia Johnson on Decemeber 7, 1899, Stubbs and his bride moved onto the James Polk Johnson ranch, one-half mile west of Johnson City. In 1915 Stubbs was appointed District Judge of the 33d Judicial District, a position he held until 1921. Meanwhile, he and his wife had sold the Johnson ranch and had moved into Johnson City. There, he shared an office with Sam E. Johnson, Jr.

After leaving the bench, Stubbs moved to Mexia, in East Texas, where he practiced law for eight years. He and his wife returned to Johnson City in 1929. In 1937, when Representative Lyndon B. Johnson telegraphed the people of Johnson City that land was needed for construction of a building to house the newly organized PEC, there had been much excitement. The only condition attached by the REA to this grant of authority was that no money was to be expended for the building site. Judge Stubbs, taking charge, within two days notified Representative Johnson that the necessary land had been acquired and was ready to be conveyed to the federal government.

In both World War I and II, Judge Stubbs served as legal adviser to the Blanco County draft board, and contributed much time and energy to insuring the success of Red Cross, Liberty Loan, and Victory Bond Drivers.

Funeral services for Judge Stubbs were held at the Croft Funeral Home on Saturday, the 11th, with burial in Johnson City. Stubbs was survived by his wife Julia, a brother Oscar of Austin, and⁴ two sisters Mrs. Ada Brown of Austin and Mrs. Edna Norman of Barksdale.

C. The Johnsons Spend Five Months at the Ranch

The 1st Session of the 83d Congress adjourned on August 3, 1953, and the Johnsons left Washington for the Pedernales. The Fredericksburg Lions and Rotary Clubs, apprised that the Senator was living at the LBJ Ranch, scheduled a joint-meeting for Wednesday evening, August 26, at the Nimitz Hotel. In announcing that the Senator would be the guest speaker, Lions' president Ty Cox told the press that members of other service clubs and their guests were welcome. Senator Johnson, Cox stated, "occupied one of the most important positions in our government today, and the Lions are happy and proud that he has accepted the invitation to speak before civic groups in the city."⁵

At 7 o'clock, on the 26th, Senator Johnson sat down to eat with 80 Fredericksburgers. After the meal, Johnson was introduced by President Cox, and gave his first speech in Fredericksburg since his high school days, when he had participated in an inter-scholastic debate in the city.

Speaking from a manuscript, Johnson warned, "unless some nations can offer us deeds instead of promises, bold acts instead of evasions, I have voted for my last foreign aid bill." This statement was loudly applauded. Continuing, he noted, "Our ancestors carved this pleasant and fruitful land out of the wilderness. They braved obstacles, conquered hazards, dared do the impossible. That was the spirit that built Fredericksburg. This is the spirit that will save America and its allies from the forces of darkness and depotism." There were more cheers and stamping of feet.

At the end of his formal speech, Johnson shed⁶ his coat, and for the next 90 minutes answered questions from the audience.

On Monday afternoon, December 14, Mrs. Johnson hosted the ladies of the Stonewall School District and Hye at a "lovely tea" at her Ranch home. The guests, besides having a wonderful time, were given a tour of the "beautiful" house by their gracious hostess.

The Johnsons celebrated their second Christmas at the Ranch and prepared to return to Washington. Senator Johnson was in his seat on January 6, 1954, when Vice President Nixon convened the Senate at the beginning of the 2d Session of the 83d Congress.

D. LBJ is Returned to the Senate

1. Johnson Annihilates Dougherty in the Primary

Johnson's term in the United States Senate expired in 1954, and, as expected, he announced that he was a candidate for re-election. Dudley Dougherty, a wealthy Beeville rancher, determined to contest Johnson for the Democratic nomination in the July primary. Dougherty waged a no holds barred campaign attacking in particular Johnson's record as a supporter of the Roosevelt-Truman foreign policies. Johnson, having "measured sentiment" in Texas with his habitual accuracy, determined that Dougherty did not constitute a threat. He remained in Washington, and relied on his friends and supporters to carry his case to the public. His judgment was vindicated, as Dougherty's drive failed to generate much enthusiasm.

On July 27 the editor of the Fredericksburg Standard informed his readers that a big turnout was anticipated in Gillespie County for Saturday's Democratic primary, because, for the first time in history, the county had a candidate for "high public office." Johnson, he pointed out, "some two years ago established his home just east of Stonewall on the Pedernales."

Voters in Gillespie and Blanco Counties, as well as the rest of Texas, rewarded Johnson with an overwhelming victory. In Blanco County 789 electors went to the polls and gave Senator Johnson 617 votes to Dougherty's 190, a victory margin of about four to one.¹⁰ In Gillespie County, the vote was Johnson 574, Dougherty 447.¹¹

2. The Johnsons Spend the Long 1954 Recess at Stonewall

There was plenty of excitement in Washington during the 2d Session of the 83d Congress. This was the year of the McCarthy hearings. Although the Senate would take along recess, it would be the first week of December before it resolved this explosive issue and adjourned. On July 30 Senator Ralph Flanders of Vermont climaxed his months-long criticism of Senator Joseph McCarthy of Wisconsin by introducing Senate Resolution 301 to censure his fellow Republican for contempt of the Senate.

Minority Leader Johnson worked closely with Majority Leader Knowland to have the censure resolution referred to a select committee of three Republicans and an equal number of Democrats, men with a judicial background. This was accomplished on August 6. The select committee then convened and the television drama of the decade commenced. The inquiry dragged on until after the November election.¹²

The Senate, with the hearings underway, recessed on Saturday, August 21. That night found Senator Johnson aboard an airplane en route to Austin. The next morning he drove out to the Ranch with his wife and daughters.

Mr. and Mrs. Art Kowert of the Frdericksburg Standard visited the Ranch in early September and found it getting that "lived in look." When they interviewed the Senator for the Standard, they learned that here among "the best people, climate, and all-the-way around best place on earth to

live," he was forgetting some of the strain of the past eight months, which had "given him the hardest year in his 20 years of public service."

Currently, he told the Kowerts, his major concern was rebuilding his 265 acres through sound soil conservation practices. To accomplish this, he and his hands were working closely with the Gillespie Soil Conservation District in the slow "process of returning the fertility to the soil." There were currently 225 acres under cultivation and 40 along the river bottom in pasture. One-half the cultivated land was being irrigated, with 15 acres in buffalo grass, 30 in alfalfa and Kentucky fescue, 25 in oats and Huban clover, and 36 in blue picnic grass.

Sixty-five Herefords and 85 Delaine sheep grazed these crops and the river bottom pasture. Johnson boasted to the Kowerts of the 14 pounds per animal clip of wool taken from his sheep, and that his two Hereford bulls belonged to the Roy Turner-Domino line.

He also had a Jersey milk cow from the prize herd of Herman Heep of Buda, president of the American Jersey Breeders Association.

Four saddle horses were kept on the Ranch, and daily, when at home, Senator Johnson rode out on his favorite mount to look over his crops, cattle, and sheep.¹³

Like any good rancher, Johnson was proud of his neighbors--Ernest Hodges, Harvey Jordan, Edmund Behrens, and Cousin Oreale Bailey. "I have the best neighbors anybody could ask for," he told the Kowerts, "Most of them lived right here when I grew up as a kid."¹⁴

Although the Senate was in recess, Johnson found much of his time engrossed by politics as he occupied four important positions--Senior Texas Senator, Democratic Majority Leader, Chairman of the Democratic Steering Committee, and Chairman of the Democratic Senate Conference. Besides traveling to all sections of the vast state to maintain contact with his constituents, his Austin office received from 500 to 800 letters a day and some days as many as 100 telephone calls. Many of these letters and calls required Johnson's personal attention.

To help him meet his public obligations, Johnson employed four key assistants--Walter Jenkins, George Reedy, Booth Mooney, and Jerry Siegel. Each of these had his own corps of assistants, and they spent many hours per month in conferences with Senator Johnson as the LBJ Ranch.

Between now and next January 3, when the 84th Congress convened, many of the Nation's great and near great could be expected to contact Senator Johnson, the Kowerts informed their readers, as he wrestled with the "multitudinous details of running the legislative affairs" of his party in the Senate.¹⁵

3. LBJ Steamrollers Carlos Watson

General Eisenhower had carried Texas in November 1952 in winning his first term as 34th President. State Republican leadership hoped to utilize

Eisenhower's popularity to build an organization that would enable them to challenge Democratic control of the state's elective offices. During the spring and summer of 1954, whenever Republican leaders met there were discussions as to whether they should nominate a candidate to run against Lyndon Johnson in November. Johnson, learning of this and desiring to be spared the necessity of another campaign, determined to act. He sent for his brother Sam Houston. He told Sam Houston that he would like him to do what he could to discourage the Republicans from challenging his reelection. Arrangements were made by LBJ for Sam Houston to fly from Washington to Houston on the same plane with a Mr. Brown, a power in the Texas Republican Party with close liaison with the White House.

While en route to Texas, Sam Houston told Brown that: (a) Lyndon was upset about the possibility of having to wage a statewide campaign; (b) Lyndon would undoubtedly be reelected by a large margin, which would be disastrous for those endeavoring to build a two-party system in Texas; and (c) heretofore Lyndon had cooperated closely with the White House and Republican leadership in the Senate on legislation of benefit to the Nation, and this could be jeopardized if he were compelled to campaign.

Brown was impressed by what Sam Houston said. After landing in Houston, he met with other party leaders, and it was announced that the Texas Republicans would not have a candidate for United States Senator that autumn.

Sam Houston now talked to state Democratic leaders. They assured him that his brother could easily defeat any Republican opposition, and the lack of a GOP candidate would be interpreted by political pundits as a deal. Sam Houston relayed this information to his brother. On doing so, Sam assured LBJ that his victory over his November opponent would be so sweeping that it would be years before the Republicans could again undertake an effective state-wide campaign. Lyndon Johnson, seeing the logic in his brother's arguments, told him to contact Brown and urge the Republicans to field a candidate. Sam did as he was told, and Carlos Watson entered the race as Republican candidate to contest Lyndon B. Johnson's reelection to the Senate.¹⁶

On Wednesday, October 27, a week before the election, LBJ was in Fredericksburg to address the Gillespie County Farm Bureau. The meeting, held at the Fair Park Exhibition Hall, began at 6:30 P.M., with a barbecue. After the feast, Bureau President Warren Petsch introduced Johnson. Johnson told his fellow Gillespians that three factors were vital for their progress and prosperity. These were soil, water, and protection of "the farmers' right of united action just as industry and labor are doing."

The farmers were urged to follow the advice of their leaders in the soil conservation program in rebuilding their soil, and he called upon them to establish comprehensive watershed controls in the Hill Country and throughout the state "to catch and store water now being wasted."

Speaking from experience, Johnson reminded his listeners of the extensive damage caused by the mid-September 1952 flood. Harnessing of the streams on the upper Pedernales watershed would, he said, "prevent the wasting of approximately 85 percent of excess water that now rushes to the sea."

Johnson forecast that "some day water will be more valuable than the black gold that flows from the great oil reserves of Texas."

Referring to the Farm Bureau and similar groups, Senator Johnson remarked that farmers, through "their organizations, must see that they get a workable farm price for their products, comparable to that of industry and labor who achieve their goals by working through organizations."¹⁷

Although the election was only six days in the future, Johnson's Fredericksburg speech was non-political and contained no references to his Republican opponent.

On November 2 Texas voters went to the polls. The Johnson-Watson contest failed to generate the interest of the Johnson-Porter election of six years before. Of the more than 500,000 votes cast for United States Senator, Johnson polled 538,417 to Watson's 95,033. Johnson, as was his habit, carried Blanco County by a landslide vote of 831 to 156, and for the first time won the Republican stronghold of Gillespie County 1,386 to 779.¹⁸

Johnson, after driving into Johnson City to vote, returned to Stonewall and listened to the returns at the LBJ Ranch. On Friday, the 5th, he left Austin to fly to Washington to be present on Monday, when the Senate reassembled from its recess to consider the report of the select committee named to study the motion to censure Senator McCarthy.

There ensued a series of votes on these recommendations that added to LBJ's prestige as a party leader. The Democrats voted as a bloc on every test, while the Republican Senators divided their strength. The final vote to "condemn" the conduct of the Wisconsin Senator came on a roll call in which all 44 Democrats present, Independent Wayne Morse of Oregon, and 22 Republicans voted "aye" and the other 22 Republicans "nay."

This business taken care of,¹⁹ the Senate adjourned on December 2, and Johnson returned to the Ranch.

E. Johnson Becomes Majority Leader in the 84th Congress

The November election, nationally, accrued to Lyndon Johnson's benefit and insured him a more important position when the 1st Session of the 84th Congress convened on January 3, 1955. He would be Majority Leader, as the Nation's voters had turned against the Eisenhower Administration as usually happens in the mid-term elections. The one vote Republican margin in the Senate was reversed. When the new Senate assembled it would number 48 Democrats, 47 Republicans, and Independent Wayne Morse, who had announced that he would vote with the Democrats to organize the Senate. In the House, the Democrats had a 232 to 203 edge.

Speaking to the press prior to his departure for Washington, Johnson stated that the Democrats' goal in organizing the Senate would be "a short, constructive, and harmonious session working in a spirit of cooperation" with the Eisenhower Administration.²⁰

Majority Leader Johnson promptly outlined for the Nation his views on issues his party planned to press:

We will proceed as rapidly as possible to build up the nation's defenses; to assure our farmers a fairer share of the nation's income, to break the bottlenecks of foreign trade; to broaden the credit base and put an end to the evil effects of the hard-money policy.

But, he added:

We Democrats will cooperate with the President on any measure which our inner consciences tell us will advance the best interests of the country. But in any event, there will be no personal attacks₂₁ on the integrity of the President or upon his intentions.

F. The Majority Leader is a "Workaholic"

Within less than three weeks after the new Congress convened, Majority Leader Johnson was hospitalized with a kidney infection. Rushed to Mayos, he underwent an operation on Friday, January 21. On Sunday, the 30th, a plane was chartered to fly the Senator and Mrs. Johnson from Rochester to their Texas Ranch. The plane's arrival at the Gillespie Airport was unexpected, and the pilot found the runway crowded by model airplane enthusiasts. After he had buzzed the field, the strip was cleared and the plane landed. The Johnsons were then driven to their Ranch.

When questioned by the press, Mrs. Johnson remarked that her husband was recuperating "nicely from his operation, although he had to take things slow." The Hill Country environment, she continued, "is the tonic he needs to speed his recovery and return to the halls of Congress." While at his home on the Pedernales, as at Mayos, Johnson kept in close contact with his aides, who had remained in the Nation's capital. According to the Senator's physicians, his return to Washington was dependent on the rapidity of his recovery.²²

Johnson was soon back on the job, where he proved to be an effective Majority Leader. He worked long hours, sparing neither himself nor his staff. His days started at dawn and ended late in the evening. He worked on Saturdays and always visited his office on Sundays. He interested himself in the problems of his fellow Senators, while not neglecting the welfare of his Texas constituents. He was "a study in applied urgency. Within the careful limits of senatorial courtesy, he managed to hustle the work along, and so intent was he on accomplishing the maximum that he thought of nothing else from January to June."²³

In early June, Senator Johnson returned to Texas for a brief visit. After attending a dinner honoring Mrs. Miriam Ferguson in Austin, Johnson spent a weekend at his ranch before flying back to Washington. On June 15 he was disturbed to learn that a wild wind and rain storm had hammered the Stonewall area the previous evening. A number of trees were blown down, including a giant pecan, and the road leading to the LBJ Ranch was blocked for several hours. Fortunately none of the Ranch buildings were damaged.

Not so lucky was Harvey Jordan, the Senator's neighbor to the east. "Baby twisters" touched down at several points and destroyed his prospects for a good peach crop. J.D. Prossie, who lived in the threeroom dwelling on the site of the old Sam Johnson house and managed the orchard for Jordan, counted 65 peach trees (Hale Haven and New Elbertas) damaged by the winds. Trees not uprooted in the 50-acre orchard had most of the fruit blown off. ²⁴ This disaster, following a late frost, all but wiped out the area's peach crop.

G. Lyndon Johnson's Walk in the Shadow of Death

1. He is Felled by a Heart Attack

Much worse was ahead for the popular 46-year-old Senator. Late in June he noticed that he was tired all the time. Speaker Rayburn "upbraided" him one evening about being a chronic workaholic and not taking proper care of his health. Johnson promised his friend that, when the session ended, which he hoped might be in August, he would return to the Ranch and take it easy until Congress reconvened in January 1956. Meanwhile, he planned to spend the long Fourth of July weekend with George and Herman Brown at their Middleburg, Virginia, estate.

Johnson worked late on Saturday afternoon, July 2. Weariness showed on his face and in his posture when he left his office on Capitol Hill, and, with his chauffeur at the wheel, started for Middleburg. As they motored across Memorial Bridge, the Senator complained of indigestion and that he was short of breath. Despite his discomfort, Johnson told his driver to continue. By the time they reached the Browns, the Senator was having chest pains. A doctor was called and Johnson was rushed to Bethesda Naval Hospital, where an examination revealed that he had suffered a serious heart attack. ²⁵ The next day two specialists from Mayos were flown to Johnson's bedside.

Mrs. Rebekah Johnson, the Senator's devoted mother, was flown to Washington. She was accompanied by her son-in-law Birge Alexander of Johnson City. They joined Lady Bird at his bedside. On Tuesday evening, the 5th, Mother Johnson telephoned her daughter, Mrs. Josefa Moss of Fredericksburg, to report on Lyndon's condition. People in the Hill Country were shocked by the news, but were united in holding "out fondest hopes and prayers for his complete and speedy recovery."²⁶

Informing her readers of their friend and neighbor's condition, Mrs. Gliddon announced in the Record-Courier, on July 8, that their Senator's heart attack was "described as moderately severe" and was attributed to his "vigorous schedule of work," following too closely behind his kidney operation. Under no circumstances, his doctors had announced, would Johnson be allowed to resume his duties during the current congressional session. "He was described as cheerful," and had sent word to the political columnists that he would be back on the job when Congress recovenes in January.

The Senators, to show their respect for their popular and hard working Majority Leader, on returning from a Fourth of July recess stood for 75

seconds in silent prayer for his recovery. President Eisenhower, who would suffer a heart attack in September 1955, addressed a personal letter to Johnson, wishing him a speedy and full recovery, while Mrs. Eisenhower sent flowers.²⁷

2. He Returns to the Ranch

By late July, Johnson's condition had improved sufficiently to warrant his release from the Bethesda Naval Hospital, and he was sent to his home at 30th Place to recuperate. After another four weeks, his doctors decided that he was well enough to permit him to return to the Ranch to continue his convalescence.

On August 26, the day before his 47th birthday, Johnson boarded a plane for the trip to Texas. Accompanying him on the flight were his wife, Mr. and Mrs. Sam Houston Johnson, his doctor Lt. Comdr. J. Willis Hurst, and the family cook Mrs. Zephyr Wright.

Meeting the airplane at the Gillespie County Airport, at 12:40 P.M., were his sister, Josefa, her husband, J.D. Moss, and their seven-year-old son, Rodney, of Fredericksburg; J.C. Kellam of Austin and Manager of KTBC-TV; two local physicians Drs. W. Herbert Hill and W. H. Springall; several²⁸ specialists from the Scott & White Clinic at Temple; and Mary Rather.

When the Senator deplaned, Mary Rather recalled that he "was the thinnest thing you have ever . . . seen, and his clothes were just hanging on him." Mrs. Johnson looked very tired.

Johnson told the small group that had gathered to greet and wish him well that he felt good. His friends were cheered to observe that he had a good color as he stepped into an air-conditioned car for a drive to the Ranch, where he was joined by his children.

Saturday, the 27th, was his birthday, and Johnson held a morning press conference in the air-conditioned livingroom. He was relaxed and spoke informally, as his Secretary, Mary Rather, handed him "stack after stack of congratulatory telegrams and cards from well wishers" across the Nation.

Johnson told the newsmen that he had found his Ranch and range in much better condition than in June. Water was in good supply and flowing over him dam. He stated that until Congress reconvened in January, offices would be open in Washington, Austin, and Johnson City, each staffed by key personnel.

He would adhere strictly to the recommendations of his doctors to take it easy, and "if his recovery continued at the same pace in the future as it had during the first eight weeks," he would keep speaking commitments in Whitney in October and in California in December.

Just as the members of the press were preparing to leave, Mr. and Mrs. Sam Houston Johnson drove up with the Senator's mother, whom they

had brought out from Austin to spend his birthday with her eldest son. Delighted to see his mother, Lyndon rose from his reclining chair and strode to the door to meet her. This was the first time he had seen her since her return to Texas, after she had spent several weeks at his bedside in early July.

Later in the day, Johnson told the press he would be joined by Representative Homer Thornberry, Judge A. W. Moursund, and Melvin Winters for dominoes.²⁹

3. His Doctors Establish a Routine

Dr. Hurst, before returning to Washington, discussed with Mary Rather the Senator's work schedule. He explained that LBJ was to get his rest. Some days he might want to see all his incoming mail, while at times he would not. The other important thing was to see that he did "not have any worries." He was not to have any appointments.

Mary Rather established her office in the southeast corner of the livingroom. She found this a difficult area for concentration, "because everybody came there." Persons passing though would sit down and chat. Sometimes Senator Johnson would drop in, talk, and look at his mail. Other times, he would come in and sit in his reclining chair. "Beagle" would hop up into his lap, and they would both drop off to sleep. "They both," Mary recalled, "had a little light snore, and I would type, and they would sleep." Finally³⁰ he and the dog would awaken and walk slowly to the gate and back.

Miss Rather recalled that they retired by 9 P.M. and got up early to the mooing of a Jersey milk cow.

"Whatever Lyndon did, Lady Bird did with him," Mary Rather continued. "How she managed to run the house, attend her children, talk to visitors who came uninvited but with good intentions, and still take care of her husband, I sometimes wondered."

Lyndon was always asking, "Where's Lady Bird?" And she was usually near enough to answer for herself, "Here I am darling."³¹

While recovering from his heart attack, Johnson, who was a restless man, awakened at all hours. Sometimes he would get up as early as 4 A.M., call Mary Rather, and go out and sit by the swimming pool. He would either dictate or talk to her.

Liz Carpenter has discussed these months with Mrs. Johnson during late afternoon strolls along the Pedernales. She has suggested to Lady Bird that the days when Lyndon hovered between life and death in the Bethesda Naval Hospital must have been an ordeal. Mrs. Johnson replied, "I'm so grateful to have him."

During the months he was recuperating at the Ranch, Mrs. Johnson made great efforts to keep her husband from becoming restless by employing the wonders of electronics to bring the world to his fingertips. Thus, a

telephone³² and a walkie-talkie were installed near the pool to keep him in his hammock.

4. His Diet

The Senator was directed by his doctors not to let his weight exceed 185 pounds. Mrs. Johnson accordingly had to learn about calorie counting, as did Zephyr Wright. A scale was purchased to weigh LBJ's servings.

Juanita Roberts, a member of Johnson's staff, had studied to be a dietician. Since she was knowledgeable on the subject, she prepared a number of menus, which she gave to Mrs. Johnson and Zephyr. It was Mrs. Roberts who introduced Johnson to tapioca made from sucaryl. Her tapioca, she made attractive, by adding a small topping of "false whipped cream," and a tiny slice of cherry.

Juanita kept telling Johnson that he must eat "proteins, proteins, and proteins," because they would rebuild his muscles and keep him from being flabby and soft. Sometimes LBJ would become exasperated and complain. Whereupon, Juanita would say, "But, Senator Johnson," and explain to him why he must have his protein. Then, one day, he exploded, "I don't ever want to hear the word protein again! Do you understand? Don't mention it to me! Lady Bird, don't you mention it to me! Mary, don't you mention it to me! I don't ever want to hear protein again!"

Within a few days, however, he relented. Calling for Mrs. Roberts, he said, "Juanita, you've got to get me some more good menus; I'm getting tired of these. I want some more with proteins in them."³³

5. The Construction of the Pool and Cabana and Arthur Godfrey's Visit

Even before the Senator's coronary, the Johnsons were planning to construct a large kidney-shape pool and cabana southeast of the house. In conjunction with this project, the area surrounding the pool area was to be landscaped.³⁴ These undertakings kept his active mind occupied. Many an hour, he sat in a yard chair and watched the workmen first excavate a gaping hole and then position forms and pour concrete.

When the pool and cabana were completed, he insisted that everyone must go swimming. Mrs. Johnson and Mary Rather would have to stop what they were doing, put on their suits, and plunge in the pool.

Next, Johnson had a Muzak System³⁵ installed in the livingroom and diningroom and then piped out to the pool.

Television and radio personality Arthur Godfrey; Frank (Scoop) Russell, vice president of NBC; William S. White, Pulitzer prize winning political writer for the New York Times; and Gerald Griffin, Washington correspondent for the Baltimore Sun, were weekend guests at the LBJ Ranch in mid-October. Godfrey and his friends arrived at the Gillespie County Airport Saturday morning, the 15th, in Godfrey's plane, from Austin. They were greeted at the Ranch by their gracious hosts Senator and Mrs. Johnson.

The weather was delightful, and during the morning Godfrey shed his clothes for swimming trunks, and, along with Johnson, became one of the first to take a "dip" in the new swimming pool. Godfrey clowned by producing a thermometer and gingerly placing it in the water. On finding the reading to be 65° he plunged into the pool. Told that the water was cooler at the bottom of the deep end, Godfrey dropped the instrument and, after waiting a few minutes, dived in and retrieved it. Upon discovering that the reading at the bottom was also 65°, Godfrey after splashing about for a few minutes, climbed out.

Johnson, on Saturday afternoon, took his guests on a tour of the Ranch, the neighborhood, Johnson City, and Fredericksburg.

On Sunday morning, the 16th, Senator Johnson, Luci Baines, and Melvin Winters drove their four visitors to the Gillespie County Airport. With Godfrey at the controls, the airplane took off at 9:30 A.M., and the Johnsons and Winters returned to the Ranch.³⁶

6. LBJ Regains His Strength and Enthusiasm

As the weeks passed, Johnson increased his physical activity. Besides swimming, he took longer walks. He was soon logging considerable mileage on the pedometer given him by one of his sisters. A favorite evening walk was down along the river to Cousin Oreale's and back.

When the deer season opened in mid-November, he awakened Lady Bird, Mary Rather, and Mary Margaret Wiley long before daybreak for the first hunt of the year. After dressing and gulping several cups of black coffee, the party assembled outside. Lady Bird drove with A.W. Moursund to the deer stand, while Mary Rather and Mary Margaret rode with LBJ. The trio of ladies each killed a buck and were back at the house within an hour.

This was the first and only time that Mrs. Johnson and Mary Rather went deer hunting at the Ranch, because they could not bear the thought of killing such beautiful animals.³⁷

LBJ was a dead shot with a rifle, and when it was suspected that a guest was not, he would fire simultaneously. He would then spend the rest of the day congratulating his friend on the handsome buck he had killed. Thus, Johnson learned to tease and joke again.³⁸

7. Visitors Beat a Path to the Pedernales

a. Senator Symington's visit

The Godfrey visit was followed by others. Only several of these received any publicity. On the fourth weekend in October, the Johnsons entertained their old friend, Stuart Symington, now a Missouri Senator. Symington flew into Austin on Friday, where he attended that evening a social function with the Johnsons. He returned to the LBJ Ranch with them.

When asked by the press if his visit had any political significance, Symington said no, it was purely social.

"I've visited my good friends Senator and Mrs. Johnson each year they've been living here," he added, "and I hope to continue these visits."

Texas political leaders and columnists interpreted the visits of Symington and other Democratic leaders to the LBJ Ranch in a different light. They concluded that it was part of a growing trend to make Senator Johnson the "favorite Son nominee for President when the Texas delegation" attended the National Democratic Convention in the summer of 1956.

Senator Symington did nothing to discourage these thoughts as he told the press, "they shouldn't count Johnson out of the race for the Democratic nomination for the Presidency."³⁹

b. Governor Stevenson and Speaker Rayburn Spend a Night at the Ranch

Governor Adlai Stevenson was in Austin, on September 28, to lecture at Texas University. He was met there by Speaker Rayburn. The Johnsons did not attend, because LBJ was still observing his doctors' order to get plenty of rest. Arrangements, however, had been made for Stevenson and Rayburn to motor out to Stonewall. It was a beautiful evening, and Lyndon and Lady Bird and Mary Rather sat under the oaks waiting. Even so, the minutes seemed to drag. Finally, Adlai and Mr. Sam arrived about 11 P.M. They then visited until about midnight, and the two distinguished guests spend the night. Mr. Sam, as usual when at the Ranch, slept in the Green Room.

Mary Rather recalled that, although Governor⁴⁰ Stevenson was a witty conversationist, Mr. Sam more than held his own.

Next morning, at 7 o'clock, Mary Rather was awakened by a hubbub. When she looked out the window, she saw the front yard was crowded with representatives from the media. Throwing on her clothes, she ran downstairs and knocked on the Johnsons' bedroom door. After she explained what it was about, the Senator told her to go out onto the porch and talk to the members of the press and tell them "they weren't expected." He did not know if Governor Stevenson would talk to them, because he had been avoiding the press. As soon as she had done this, she knocked on Stevenson's door and explained what had happened. He told her that before seeing the press he wished to confer with Speaker Rayburn and Senator Johnson, so they could pool their thoughts on what he ought to say.

While the three Democratic leaders talked, the cook made coffee, which was served to the media people out in the front yard. There were just too many to invite into the house. After a while Governor Stevenson, followed by Johnson and Rayburn, walked out onto the front porch and a press conference ensued.⁴¹

c. Johnson Takes Senator Kefauver Deer Hunting

Senator Estes Kefauver of Tennessee, a declared aspirant for the Democratic nomination for the Presidency in 1956, was at the ranch in late November. Also there for the first time were Liz and Leslie Carpenter,

Washington correspondents for a pool of Texas newspapers, which included the Austin Statesman. Johnson, always the hospitable host, posed with Estes, who wore his coonskin cap, his campaign's trademark.

That night Estes slept in the Green Room and Liz and Leslie in the Gay Room. At 4:30 A.M., on the 22d, LBJ awoke them to go deer hunting. He called, "Come down here Estes, I was about to come out for some one else for President if you don't get down here in ten minutes!" Before putting on their hunting togs, the two Senators plunged into Johnson's heated swimming pool. Shortly thereafter, accompanied by Liz and Leslie Carpenter, they started on their hunting trip. Shortly after daybreak, near the Llano, Blanco, Gillespie County line, Senator Kefauver bagged a ten-point buck.

Upon his mid-morning return to the Ranch, Kefauver, with Johnson standing by, held a press conference. When asked about the deer, he stammered, "I was surprised I got it."

Turning to politics, the Tennessean told the press that he was "immensely" enjoying his visit with Senator and Mrs. Johnson, and praised LBJ's leadership in the Senate, and especially his work with the Senate Preparedness Subcommittee, "whose investigations had saved America millions of dollars." Kefauver, while leaving no doubt that he would seek the Democratic Presidential nomination, let it be known he would not be a candidate for Vice President.

When the reporters questioned Johnson on his political aspirations for 1956, he told them he would not be a candidate for any office next year.

The Carpenters, who had known the Johnsons in Washington, stayed for dinner. Among the guests, in addition to Kefauver, was the Round Mountain postmistress. All thoroughly enjoyed the crisp autumn air of the Hill Country and LBJ's Texas size hospitality.⁴²

d. The Ranch Becomes a Magnet for Democratic Politicians

Other influential Democratic leaders visiting the Ranch that autumn included Senators Kerr Scott of North Carolina, Hubert H. Humphrey of Minnesota, Robert Kerr of Oklahoma, William J. Fulbright of Arkansas, Price Daniel of Texas, and George Smathers of Florida. The latter chose a cool night for his visit, and next day he admitted that he had been compelled to spread his overcoat over the covers to keep warm. Mrs. Johnson was embarrassed. She had not remembered to tell him that "the fancy gadget on the bedside table was the switch for the electric blanket."

Texas Governor Allan Shivers and Lieutenant Governor Ben Ramsey stopped by to discuss politics with the Johnsons. National Park Service Director Conrad Wirth had also been a guest at the Ranch in connection with the proposal to establish Enchanted Rock as a unit in the National Park System.⁴³

e. A Powerful Republican Senator Spends Thanksgiving at the Ranch

Not to be outdone by the Democrats, the Republican Whip in the Senate, H. Styles Bridges of New Hampshire, spent Thanksgiving Day at the LBJ Ranch. Bridges and his wife landed at the Gillespie County Airport shortly after the departure of the Kefauver plane. After dinner, Johnson took Bridges on a tour of the Ranch, and Bridges admired the Senator's herd of Herefords and Delaine sheep.

A principal topic of discussion was the White House Conference called for December 13 by President Eisenhower. As leaders of their respective parties in the Senate, they would both attend. Before leaving, Bridges told the reporters that he was delighted to see the marked improvement in his friend's health.⁴⁴

8. Johnson Re-enters the Ring

It was November before Johnson undertook his first public appearance, the once postponed speech at the Democratic fund-raising dinner in Whitney. He and Lady Bird entered the packed National Guard Armory to the cheers of 1,500 Texans. After giving his prepared speech, and having gauged his audience, Johnson spoke off the cuff. As Mary Rather recalled, the crowd "kept laughing, and they kept clapping, and they loved every minute of it. He did too." She sensed that this was "probably the turning point in his decision that he did have the strength and certainly he had the ambition and the desire to go back to Washington in January."

During the weeks following his return from Whitney, the old Johnson zest returned. When it came time to travel to California for the speech before the American Hotel Association, he told Lady Bird we will take Lynda and Luci with us, and stay over a few days so the girls can see Disneyland. When they flew to Los Angeles, Mary Rather accompanied the family. The parents spent a day at Disneyland with the girls, and Mary took them the next day.⁴⁵

H. Johnson Returns to Washington and Resumes His Duties as Majority Leader

On Tuesday afternoon, December 27, Senator Johnson, Lady Bird, and Lynda Bird departed from the Gillespie County Airport on the first leg of a flight that was to take them back to Washington and the convening of the 2d Session of the 84th Congress. Before boarding the airplane, Johnson was interviewed by Art Kowert of the Fredericksburg Standard.

Johnson told Kowert that, during the morning, he had made a final inspection of his Ranch; that his registered Herefords and small grain crops were in top condition; and that he was leaving his place in good hands, under the direction of foreman Edmund Kunz.

He had enjoyed his four months of rest and relaxation in the Hill Country, and expected to be back for a visit in February and several other times during the forthcoming session.

As for their immediate plans, the family would spend the night in Houston and fly on to Rochester, Minnesota, in the morning. At Mayos, Johnson would receive a physical examination, to determine whether his recovery had progressed far enough to permit him to resume his arduous duties as Senate Majority Leader. From Minnesota, the Johnsons would fly to Washington on Sunday, New Year's Day, where the Senator would address the Women's National Press Club on Tuesday night.⁴⁶

At Mayos, the doctors found that Johnson's recovery from his July 2 heart attack was "satisfactory and complete." Given a clean bill of health, Johnson was present on January 3, 1956, when the 2d Session of the 84th Congress convened.

Vice President Nixon, the Senate's presiding officer, devoted his opening remarks to welcoming Lyndon Johnson back as Majority Leader, and congratulating him on "regaining his health." Afterwards the Senate leaders gathered for picture taking, and the Johnson City Record-Courier for January 13 featured a photograph of Lyndon Johnson chatting with fellow Democratic leaders Walter George of Georgia and Harry F. Byrd of Virginia, Minority Leader William Knowland of California, and Vice President Nixon.⁴⁷

Johnson continued to give close personal attention to his colleagues' problems. But he now set a sensible schedule for himself. He rested periodically, observed his diet, and turned over to his staff many of the details he had handled. "He enjoyed a new sense of sureness in his position and responsibility."⁴⁸

I. The 1956 Campaign and General Election

1. The Texas Democrats Endorse Johnson as Their Favorite Son Candidate for the Presidency

In 1956 the American people faced another Presidential election year. With Democrats in control of both Houses of Congress and President Eisenhower, a Republican in the White House, political infighting accelerated as winter merged into spring.

Speaker Rayburn encouraged party leaders in Texas to campaign for a delegation to the Democratic National Convention pledged to support Lyndon Johnson as a favorite-son nominee for the Presidency, and to elect Johnson as delegation chairman. Rayburn had no illusion regarding Johnson being nominated, but he wished to use this as a means for wresting⁴⁹ control of the Texas Democratic party from Governor Shivers and his people.

Lyndon Johnson accordingly returned to Texas during a spring recess. On Tuesday evening, April 9, from Austin he told a state-wide television audience that he would welcome a favorite-son Presidential nomination at the Democratic National Convention in Chicago. Speaking in front of a large map of Central Texas, on which viewers could see outlined Gillespie and Blanco Counties, Johnson stated that "He wanted the people of Texas united."

"We want our state," he continued:

and our country, to be strong and are united through the medium of free discussion and by a sense of responsibility.

I have no quarrel with those who support another party. I disagree with them but it is a disagreement based on principle and not upon a challenge to their motives or their patriotism.

"If it should be the will of the majority of the delegates to the State Convention," he stated:

representing the majority of the people of Texas, that my name be placed in nomination at the Chicago Convention, I will be deeply honored. If it is also the will of the delegates to the State Convention that I head the Texas delegation to the National Convention, I will accept the responsibility that this post brings, and be grateful for the trust and confidence reposed in me.

Johnson's address was a challenge to Governor Shivers, current titular head of the Democratic Party in Texas. Earlier in the day, Shivers (who had supported Eisenhower four years before) had declared his availability as chairman of the state's 56-member delegation to the Chicago convention. The Johnson and Shivers announcements set the stage for a head-on clash between their forces for control of the Democratic Party in Texas.

As to be expected, county party chairmen in the Hill Country rushed to Johnson's support. Tom Schmidt, Gillespie County Chairman, declared that the "homefolks" were all for "Lyndon as the favorite-son nominee, and to head the Texas delegation to the National Convention."⁵⁰

The following Thursday, the 11th, Johnson faced a battery of newsmen at a press conference at the LBJ Ranch. As expected, he was closely questioned regarding his decision to challenge the Shivers forces by actively seeking to become a "favorite-son" nominee and chairman of the Texas delegation to the Chicago convention.⁵¹

Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson spent the weekend of May 4-8 at the Ranch. This was the time that Texas Democrats met in precinct and county conventions to select delegates to the state convention to be held in Dallas on Tuesday, the 22d.

On Saturday, the 5th, Senator Johnson, who maintained his legal residence in Johnson City, drove into town to attend the convention of voters of Precinct No. 5 in the courtroom of the Blanco County Courthouse. The meeting was called to order by George Crofts. As the first order of business, the office of permanent chairman was declared vacant. Senator Johnson was then nominated and elected by acclamation to this position. Resolutions were introduced and passed designating Johnson as their choice to lead the Texas delegation to the National Convention, and as a favorite-son

candidate for the Democratic nomination for President. The delegates selected to attend the Blanco County Convention--Lyndon Johnson, Bob McKinney, George Crofts, Herman Knox, W.E. Stevenson, and W.S. Crider--was instructed to have that group bind the county delegates to the state convention to vote as a unit.⁵²

Meanwhile, the Gillespie County Democrats were meeting in precinct conventions, and had named delegates to the county convention favoring Senator Johnson.

On Monday, the 7th, while results of the precinct meetings were being tabulated, Johnson held a press conference at the Ranch. He stated that he "deeply appreciated" the grass roots support he was receiving from Texas Democrats. He emphasized that he was "especially proud of the support given him by his home counties of Gillespie and Blanco, stating that this was the finest tribute any man could receive."

Asked if he would accept the nomination for President if it were offered, Johnson replied, "I would as of now." This was taken by the correspondents as leaving the door ajar, but, though pressed, the Senator refused to be more specific.

Then, on Tuesday evening, the Gillespie County Democrats held their county convention at the courthouse. A resolution endorsing Johnson as "favorite-son" nominee for President and chairman of the Texas delegation was unanimously adopted and the six delegates to the State Convention pledged to support the Gillespie County native. Josefa Johnson Moss, who, like her brothers Lyndon and Sam Houston, loved politics, was named delegation chairman.

Earlier in the day, Senator Johnson had attended the Blanco County Convention in Johnson City, where he was named delegation chairman. He and Lady Bird then returned to Washington.

Preliminary reports from the 254 Texas counties indicated that, at Dallas, Johnson forces would be in control. Unofficial tabulations showed that there had been selected at county conventions, 1,113 delegates pledged to the Senator and only 64 for Governor Shivers.⁵³

At Dallas, on May 22, the State Democratic Convention went all out for Lyndon B. Johnson. He was named "favorite-son" nominee for the Presidency and leader of Texas' 56-member delegation to the National Convention. Long, loud, and enthusiastic demonstrations had ensued on both occasions and at the conclusion of speeches by supporters nominating him.

Unity and party loyalty were the themes of the convention that left no doubt but that Johnson had taken over leadership of the Texas Democratic Party.⁵⁴

2. Johnson Stumps for Stevenson and Kefauver

The Democratic National Convention convened in Chicago in the third week of August. In addition to LBJ, two other Blanco County voters, Judge

A.W. Moursund and B. K. McKinney, were members of the Texas delegation. Before their Monday, August 13, departure for the "Windy City," these two men, both alternate delegates, were instructed by the Blanco County Democratic Convention "to support the nomination of Lyndon B. Johnson as Texas' favorite-son" for the Presidency.⁵⁵

After the convention had convened and had adopted a platform, the contest for the Presidential nomination opened. Lyndon Johnson was nominated by his long-time friend and former assistant, John Connally. But 1956 was not to be his year. The delegates again turned to Adlai Stevenson, and he was easily nominated on the first roll call of the states.

Next came the battle for the Vice Presidential nomination, won by Senator Kefauver on the second ballot, after a spirited contest with the young senator from Massachusetts John F. Kennedy. In the fight for the vice presidential nomination, Johnson, at the last moment, threw the Texas delegation behind Kennedy. Although this did not give him victory, Kennedy remembered Johnson's aid, and it laid the groundwork for what was to happen at Los Angeles in 1960.

Lyndon Johnson, having pledged his support to the successful candidates, returned to the LBJ Ranch. Although his "favorite-son" candidacy had failed to generate much interest outside of Texas, many political observers, satisfied that President Eisenhower would defeat Stevenson in November, considered Johnson a top contender for the nomination in 1960.⁵⁶

Johnson, as a loyal Democrat, worked hard for the Stevenson-Kefauver ticket. On Friday, October 19, Senator Johnson spent several hours in Johnson City campaigning and greeting his many friends. He was accompanied by Speaker Sam Rayburn and Tenth District Representative Homer Thornberry.⁵⁷

On Monday noon, the 22d, Senators Lyndon Johnson and Russell Long of Louisiana were dinner guests of the Fredericksburg Rotary at the Nimitz Hotel.

Senator Johnson was introduced by Alfred Petsch, who remarked that he ranked "as Gillespie County's second most distinguished citizen, being out-ranked only by Fleet Admiral Chester W. Nimitz."

The Senate Majority Leader, in his brief remarks before introducing Senator Long, said he "was happy to bow to Admiral Nimitz in the ranking of distinguished son." He continued by telling how he "cherished the fact that he was born in Gillespie County." Johnson also introduced his mother and wife, who had accompanied him and Senator Long, as two ladies "responsible for making me what I am today." Both ladies spoke briefly.

From Fredericksburg, the two Senators drove to Brownwood, where they were principal speakers at a \$10 per plate Democratic rally that evening.⁵⁸

Meanwhile, Texas liberals had challenged the Johnson-Rayburn leadership. In September, the Texas Democrats convened in Fort Worth to endorse the party nominees chosen during the summer primaries. Price Daniel,

having decided to give up his Senate seat, had won a close race to be the party's candidate for governor in the November election. Now, however, a block of liberal delegates threatened to seize control of the convention and void Daniel's victory at the ballot box. But they did not get the opportunity, because of Lyndon Johnson's firm control of the convention machinery. He so managed the "credential committee's decisions that most of the revolt-minded liberals were not allowed to take part in the convention."

Thus, in May, Johnson had routed the conservative wing of the Texas Democratic Party, while in September he had vanquished its liberal arm. This "demonstrated that Johnson not only liked the middle of the political road--the prudent, responsible posture he believed most citizens endorsed but that he could fight and win to stay in the middle of the road under challenges from either side."⁵⁹

Nationally, 1956 was not a Democratic year, and when the voters went to the polls on November 6, the Eisenhower-Nixon ticket won by a landslide. The Democrats, however, did well in state elections and retained control of Congress.

The Johnsons were at the ranch over the Christmas holidays. Mrs. Johnson, as she had done before, on Wednesday, the 19th, held an open house for the ladies of the Stonewall-Hye community.⁶⁰

J. Johnson Serves the Senate Democrats as Majority Leader in the 85th Congress

1. The Liberals Challenge Johnson's Leadership

Senator Johnson and his family returned to Washington with the new year, and on Thursday, January 3, 1957, the 85th Congress convened. Although there were 49 Democrats and 47 Republicans, Johnson's reelection as Majority Leader was not certain, because many veteran Capitol Hill observers were uncertain as to how the newly elected Democratic senator from Ohio, Frank Lausche, would vote on organization of the Senate. When he stayed with the Democrats, Johnson's retention of his position was assured. Sam Rayburn was re-elected Speaker of the House by a vote of 223 to 200. With the two powerful Texans returned to their positions, the Record-Courier boasted, our state has "a clean sweep of the national leaders," as President Eisenhower was born in Denison.⁶¹

Meanwhile, the National Democratic Committee had established a Democratic Advisory Council to formulate legislative policies for the party. This was a slap at Majority Leader Johnson and Speaker Rayburn. They had little use for the Council, treating "it with cold disdain. They insisted that they were elected to office, and were elected to their congressional leadership positions" by their peers. They, not a political committee, would continue to establish legislative goals and priorities for their party in Congress.

During the 1st Session of the 85th Congress much of Johnson's time and energy were engrossed by steering through the Senate, the first civil rights legislation enacted by that body since 1867. The right of unlimited debate in the Senate had enabled members to filibuster measures to death, whenever

there was sufficient opposition. This had been the fate of antilynching bills and other efforts in the past to enact federal legislation in the field of civil rights. Southern senators could be counted on to talk against such bills until their sponsors abandoned interest in favor of more pressing business.

In July the Senate debated the 1957 Civil Rights Bill for two weeks. The most controversial part of the measure was designated Title III. It was designed to permit the United States Attorney General "to cut across traditional jurisprudence in enforcing" the rights of blacks to vote. Johnson and his advisors were satisfied that Title III "was unwise and indefensible." He therefore scheduled a vote on this provision first. It, as he expected, was voted down. Johnson then marshaled a majority for the Civil Rights Bill.⁶²

2. The Johnsons Spend Several Recesses at the Ranch

In the fourth week of June, a short recess enabled the Johnsons to return to their Texas Ranch. They arrived on Tuesday, the 25th, and the next day Lyndon had a party honoring his mother on her 76th birthday. Among the guests present at the Ranch were four of Mrs. Johnson's five children. Sam Houston, having broken his leg, was hospitalized in Washington and was unable to attend.⁶³

On Thursday evening, the 27th, Lyndon Johnson, accompanied by his wife and mother, motored into Fredericksburg, where he was to be principal speaker at the 37th Annual Meeting of the local Chamber of Commerce. A large crowd was in attendance, as A. G. Davidson introduced the Majority Leader, his wife, and mother.

Johnson gave a prepared speech, but frequently departed from the text to speak "off the cuff" at which he was a master, as "he graciously acknowledged his happiness and that of his family in being present."

The audience was told that two great issues faced the country, disarmament and atomic fallout. He emphasized that all domestic issues were inconsequential unless "we can find the answers to world disarmament."

He spoke, too, of the need for flood control on the Pedernales and other rampaging Texas rivers. We are spending sixty billion dollars in foreign aid to build dams all over the world, he observed, yet right here in our community we let the Pedernales wash us away. His statement brought a round of applause, because at the end of April there had again been extensive flooding on the Pedernales watershed. At Stonewall, the fickle river had spilled over the bottoms, but had failed by about 67 inches to reach the heights recorded in the September 1952 flood.

After making a pitch for the Democratic Party in Republican Fredericksburg, Senator Johnson stated that he had "great faith in the people who were running the government, and that he didn't think there were any problems we couldn't solve."⁶⁴

In the third week of August, Senator Johnson took another break, and, to escape the hot, humid capital city he returned for a long weekend at the

ranch. His visit coincided with the 69th Annual Gillespie County Fair, and he attended all three afternoons as an honored guest.

Accompanied by his new foreman, William J. "Corky" Cox, Johnson was especially interested in the show cattle. Having employed Cox, a former vocational teacher at Junction High School, Johnson told of plans to develop "one of the state's outstanding registered Hereford herds on the LBJ Ranch." He had already made a good start, having acquired breeding stock from some of the best Texas bloodlines. Within the near future, he hoped to show his cattle at the Gillespie County Fair.⁶⁵

Johnson and his party entered the fair grounds grandstand on Friday and Saturday afternoons almost unnoticed. But on Sunday, the 18th, it was different. He was introduced to the large crowd, receiving a standing ovation. Later, the Fredericksburg High School Band struck up the "Washington Post March" in his honor. He had but one chore, and that was to serve as honorary judge of the County Fair Derby, the final horse race, which ended in a dead heat.

Reminiscing with friends, Senator Johnson told them that attendance at the fair was not a new experience. He recalled that as far back as 1912, he had accompanied his father to the fair. In recent years, public duties had prevented his attendance.

"The fair," he told the press, "has certainly grown and the exhibits here show the marked progress in all lines of ranching and farming in the Hill Country and Texas."⁶⁶

While in Texas, Johnson, who had been an eyewitness of the damage wreaked by the rain-swollen Pedernales in 1952, announced that \$35,000 had been appropriated by Congress for a survey of the feasibility of flood control and water conservation measures for the Pedernales watershed by the Corps of Engineers. Advising her readers of this, Editor Gliddon observed, this "might be the beginning of a series of dams which would be of untold help in the conservation of water, which now flows into the Colorado." Once again, the editor and life-long friend, wrote, "Senator Johnson and Congressman Thornberry have taken the 'bull by the horns' . . . and have advanced a proposition and secured results for which all should be truly grateful."⁶⁷

3. Johnson's Vigorous Response to Sputniks I & II

On Monday, August 26, Johnson returned to his duties in Washington, and four days later the 1st Session of the 85th Congress adjourned.

The Johnsons planned to spend the next four months at the Ranch. But, on October 4, the Soviet Union orbited their first Sputnik. Liz Carpenter was visiting the Johnsons at this time and recalls that on evening strolls along the Pedernales, they looked up into the heavens and imagined that they could see Sputnik I and discussed what it portended for the future.⁶⁸

Nationally, there was an outcry about the status of the United States space program, especially when, on November 3, Sputnik II roared into orbit, while America's first launching effort fizzled, as the news media looked on.

Nobody in authority responded affirmatively until Majority Leader Johnson called a series of public hearings to be conducted by the watchdog subcommittee of the Senate Armed Services Committee.

On November 4, the day after the orbiting of Sputnik II, Johnson and two of his colleagues spent most of the day at the Pentagon being briefed on the status of the United States space program. When it was revealed in these discussions that a crucial decision had been deferred from July to October and then had not been made at all, Johnson exploded, "Gentlemen, you'll be seeing a lot more of my committee and my staff. You need a good deal of help."

Johnson accordingly spent many long November and December days in Washington, holding hearings. He and his fellow committee members "probed and pried, examined and cross-examined." They quizzed generals and admirals and civilian experts on every detail of the Nation's sprawled-out efforts to get "its space program moving."

Largely, because of the heat applied by Senator Johnson, the Eisenhower administration found ways to accelerate and better coordinate its space program.

4. The Johnsons Participate in the Blanco County Centennial

The Johnsons were back in their 30th Place home, when the 2d Session of the 85th Congress convened on January 7, 1958. The final years of Johnson's Senate leadership brought increased national recognition.

Blanco County was 100 years old, and a centennial celebration was scheduled for August 6 and 7. On the 3d, three days before it was to begin, a tornado struck the Johnson City area, doing an estimated \$30,000 damage. Crofts' mill at the west edge of town was hard hit, but the frame warehouse, formerly housing Withers' Store, on the opposite side of Main Street, was unscathed.

When the Blanco County Centennial, opened on the 6th, Senator Johnson, his family, and his mother, as to be expected, were in attendance, sitting in a flag-draped box in the grandstand. The first event on Wednesday evening found Senator Johnson crowning before a large crowd Miss Sally Casparis "as Blanco County Centennial and Fair Queen." This was followed by a pageant featuring various episodes in Johnson's life, beginning with his boyhood and ending with his election as Majority Leader of the Senate.

On Thursday, the 7th, at 10:30 A.M., there was a parade, while that evening the centennial pageant, "We the Pioneers," was presented.

5. The Senator Loses His Mother

The 2d Session of the 85th Congress adjourned on August 24, and the Senator and Mrs. Johnson looked forward to spending the next 18 weeks at the LBJ Ranch. A major sorrow was to mar these months.

Early in July the Senator's mother underwent surgery. Upon learning of this, President Eisenhower wrote Johnson conveying his regrets. He asked the Majority Leader to please inform his mother that "Mrs. Eisenhower and I are thinking of her and send our very best wishes for a speedy and complete recovery."⁷²

Writing his mother on July 21, Johnson noted that in his lifetime, he had "known several good and wise influences--first you and Daddy, then Senator Wirtz, Lady Bird and Homer Thornberry." He was "grateful to God" that he had had "such loyalty and devotion from such heads."⁷³

After seeming to recover from her operation, Rebekah Baines Johnson suffered a relapse, and died on Friday night, September 13, in Austin's Brackenridge Hospital. With her at her death were her son Lyndon and other members of the family. Funeral services were held on Sunday afternoon at 2:30 in Johnson City at Croft's Funeral Home, with Dr. Blake Smith of Austin's University Baptist Church officiating. Burial followed in the Johnson Family Cemetery at Stonewall.⁷⁴

One month later, on Sunday, October 12, Senator Johnson was the principal speaker at the formal opening of Fredericksburg's Market Produce Co's new processing plant.

Johnson, who was introduced as one who might be the next president of the United States, addressed a crowd estimated at 5,000 from the steps of the plant's main entrance.

"Gillespians are can do people, and this is the reason we are standing here this afternoon to officially open this processing plant," he told the throng. "I am proud to be a Gillespian," Johnson continued. My parents and grandparents are "buried in soil on the banks of the Pedernales." He told of how the "folks of Gillespie had ever held aloft the spirit of the free enterprise system, and that he was proud to be one of them."

The South, Senator Johnson told his enthusiastic audience, had been known as the Nation's No. 1 economic headache when he entered Congress ²¹ years ago, but today it was the country's "chief economic possibility."⁷⁵

On November 4 the Nation's voters went to the polls. As usually happens in off-year elections, the party holding the Presidency took a beating. Democrats unseated a number of Republicans, and in the next Congress would control the Senate by 64 to 34, rather than a razor thin majority of 49 to 47. The same situation would prevail in the House, where there would be 283 Democrats and 153 Republicans.

When the 1st Session of the 86th Congress convened on January 7, 1959, Lyndon Johnson was re-elected the Senate's Majority Leader by his party, while House Democrats continued Sam Rayburn as Speaker.

K. 1959--An Eventful Year

1. Johnson is Pressed to Seek the Presidency But Keeps His Options Open

During 1959 the subject of Lyndon Johnson running for the Presidency began to receive more than passing attention from the media. When discussing the chances of his being nominated and elected to that office, Johnson's reply, before 1960, was that no Southerner had been elected President since the Civil War, if you discounted Woodrow Wilson. Moreover, he was "satisfied to be a member of the United States Senate, the greatest deliberative body in the world, that he really was just a fellow from the banks of the Pedernales and he wasn't convinced he had all the qualifications a President needed."

On evaluating his options, he recognized that he: (a) might seek the 1960 Democratic nomination for the Presidency, as he was being urged to do by many of his political friends; (b) might be defeated in his bid and lose his seat in the Senate, as his term would expire in 1960; and (c) might find a way to campaign for re-election to the Senate, while also being available as a possible Presidential nominee.

To solve his dilemma, he worked closely with his political ally and friend, Governor Price Daniel. The Texas legislature accordingly rewrote the state election code. The time of the party primaries was changed from July and August to May and June. This would allow Johnson to be renominated as Senator before the national political conventions scheduled for July. As rewritten the code also provided that a candidate's name could appear on the ballot in two places, which meant that if Senator Johnson's name were to be on the national presidential ticket, it could be entered as United States Senator for re-election.⁷⁶

Johnson accepted speaking engagements that summer and autumn which took him to many places in Texas, as well as to other parts of the Nation. During the Labor Day recess, he flew to Minneapolis, where on the morning of August 27, he addressed the 41st Annual Convention of the American Legion. Leaving the Twin Cities at 11:30 A.M., he spent the late afternoon in El Paso, where he made a brief speech at the ceremonies opening for traffic the Cordova Bridge. From there, Johnson flew to Bergstrom Air Force Base, near Austin, and then motored to the Ranch, arriving about midnight.

On Saturday, the 29th, Senator and Mrs. Johnson drove to the West Ranch, near Round Mountain, for a short visit with the Wests. They then boarded a light airplane at the Wests' strip and flew to San Augustine, in East Texas. That evening, Johnson spoke before the Deep East Texas Co-op.⁷⁷ The next day, the Johnsons returned to Washington.

2. Johnson Continues to Court the Homefolks

Although Johnson's attention was more and more focused on the national scene, he did not forget his Hill Country constituents. In April 1959 more than 200 Blanco County citizens signed a letter addressed to Senator Johnson, expressing their gratitude for his efforts in their behalf. Respond-

ing to this gesture on his homefolks' part, Senator Johnson wrote Mrs. W. N. Cox of the Johnson City Chamber of Commerce. He informed her in a letter published in the Record-Courier:

You people of Johnson City and Blanco County will never know how much I appreciated the letter with the many signatures expressing appreciation for what I have done for my hometown and Blanco County. It was on the top of the stack that was waiting my return.

Expressions from you people whom I have grown up with, and who know me, and some who have known me since I discovered America, mean more to me than you will ever know. I would like to write each person who signed the letter, but time will not permit, because when I start dictating to my old friends it would be hard to ever stop. So I would like to ask a favor of you, to express my appreciation to all.

You can rest assured that I will try and do my best to make you, people of Johnson City and Blanco County proud of me.⁷⁸

A Washington luncheon attended by Senator Johnson, on May 29, attracted much local interest. On that day Johnson had eaten at the West German Embassy with Chancellor Konrad Adenauer, who was on a State visit to the United States. Seated on Adenauer's right, the Majority Leader spent two and one-half hours discussing with the German statesman, Communism, Berlin, and the Texas-German heritage. Johnson told the Chancellor about the German communities centering on Fredericksburg, New Braunfels, and Seguin, and their cultural influence on the Hill Country. Adenauer revealed to Johnson that one of his grandmothers had emigrated to the United States in the late 1840s, the same period that brought the Germans to Texas.

Johnson, after stating that some of his mother's forebearers were German, invited Adenauer to visit Texas and Fredericksburg on his next trip to the United States.⁷⁹

3. The October 4, 1959, Flood

Congress adjourned on September 15, and three days later Senator and Mrs. Johnson arrived at the Ranch. LBJ, during his first week on the Pedernales, dove hunted frequently at the tanks with friends, Mrs. Johnson, and Mary Margaret Wiley. On Saturday, the 26th, he flew from Fredericksburg to Amarillo. That afternoon he made a speech in nearby Canyon. Back at the Ranch that evening, he drove the next day to Austin to attend the funeral of former Texas Governor James Alfred, a long-time friend.⁸⁰

On Saturday, October 3, Senator and Mrs. Johnson surprised their neighbors by being flown into Stonewall by helicopter. The craft with Joe Mashman at the controls landed near Weinheimer & Son. After buying their groceries and picking up the mail, the Johnsons flew back to the Ranch.⁸¹

The helicopter shopping trip was a prelude to an exciting weekend. Throughout the day a series of heavy rains drenched the area. During the afternoon, Governor and Mrs. Price Daniel drove out from Austin to be overnight guests of the Johnsons. At 1 A.M., on Sunday the 4th, the Johnson-Daniel discussions of the international situation were interrupted by an urgent telephone call from Ranch Maintenance Chief Lawrence Klein of Stonewall. Klein told Senator Johnson that he had learned from Sheriff Hugo Klaerner of Gillespie County that 18 inches of rain had fallen at Spring Creek on the upper watershed of the Pedernales and extensive flooding in the Stonewall area was feared. Johnson's response to this emergency and his activities during the next 24 hours are detailed on pages 45-8 of Edwin C. Bearss, Historic Structure Report Junction School, Lyndon B. Johnson National Historic Site, Texas (Denver, 1975).⁸²

4. A Hill Country Gala for President Lopez Mateos

On Monday, October 6, Senator Johnson returned to Washington by way of Austin and Bonham. At the former he addressed a meeting of the Brotherhood of Locomotive Engineers and Firemen, while at the latter, where he spent the nights of the 6th and 7th, he conferred with Speaker Rayburn and Congressmen Homer Thornberry and Frank N. Ikard.

The Johnsons were on hand in the capital city, on the 10th, when President Adolfo Lopez Mateos of Mexico arrived to be welcomed by President Eisenhower. That evening a State dinner was given by President and Mrs. Eisenhower at the White House for their guest. Among those in attendance were Senator and Mrs. Johnson.

Hill Country residents now learned that the Mexican president would be visiting the LBJ Ranch as guest of the Johnsons on the following weekend, as a climax of his ten-day visit to the United States and Canada. Besides the hectic activity associated with a State visit, much hard work would be required on the part of the Johnson employees and their neighbors to finish cleaning up debris left by the devastating October 4 flood.⁸³

The Johnsons were back at Stonewall on Tuesday, the 13th, to oversee preparations for a Texas barbecue. On the 15th Mrs. Chester Kooch drove out from Austin to review with Mrs. Johnson plans for the barbecue and to examine the site where it was to be held. The next day a Secret Service detail arrived from Washington, along with a State Department expert on protocol.

On Sunday morning, the 18th, President Mateos and his party left Niagara Falls and landed at Austin at 11:30 A.M. There, the President was warmly greeted by Senator Johnson and Governor Daniel. President Mateos, Senator Johnson, Governor Daniel, and Ambassador Carrillo Flores then boarded a waiting helicopter and were flown to the Ranch. The flight plan took them over the scenic Highland Lakes. A number of other guests also arrived by helicopter, and for several hours a steady stream of these craft were landing and taking off from the lawn between the house and the Pedernales.

The Hill Country barbecue, with which the Johnsons honored their distinguished visitor, was labeled by old timers as the "biggest celebrity laden event in the 114 years history of these parts." Among the more than 300 guests were former President Harry S Truman and Speaker of the House Sam Rayburn, who had flown from Dallas to Fredericksburg and were helicoptered to the Ranch; Secretary of the Treasury Robert S. Anderson of Texas, representing the Eisenhower Administration; and four other Texas Congressmen O.C. Fisher of San Angelo, Joe M. Kilgore of McAllen, John Young of Corpus Christi, and J. T. Rutherford of Odessa.

The barbecue and program were held in the oak grove on the north bank of the Pedernales, near the Johnsons' low water dam. From a podium, sheltered by a tent, Senator Johnson opened the brief informal program. After speaking of the friendship existing between the United States and Mexico, he introduced President Mateos. Speaking in Spanish, his message being translated by an interpreter, President Mateos praised the "good neighbor policy" of the United States, which was bringing the two nations closer together. The future, he trusted, would see even "a closer understanding and friendship between the two countries."

After the speeches, the guests filed by tables laden with barbecue and all the "trimmings," and ate on tables tastefully arranged under the beautiful oaks.

President Mateos was taken on a late afternoon tour of the Ranch by Lyndon Johnson, after the other guests and newspaper correspondents had paid their respects to their hosts and had departed. That evening the Johnsons entertained President Mateos, his official party, and a few selected guests at a formal dinner. The next morning was Monday, and following a leisurely breakfast, President Mateos said his goodbyes and returned to Austin, preparatory to returning to Mexico.⁸⁴

5. Johnson Accelerates His Campaigning

At the barbecue, a sign had been "prominently hung in one of the trees," proclaiming, "Lyndon Johnson sera presidente." This was the first public indication that Speaker Rayburn and other Democratic leaders were making headway in their persuasive arguments that Johnson owed it to the Democratic Party to make a run for the presidential nomination in 1960.⁸⁵

Taking a cue from this incident, Tom Schmidt, the Gillespie County Democratic chairman, announced that Gillespians were going to support the Majority Leader for President. Petitions were being circulated, Schmidt stated, to give everyone in the county an opportunity to signify their backing of Lyndon B. Johnson for the Nation's highest office.⁸⁶

Johnson with Congress adjourned, continued to travel extensively. On Tuesday, October 20, he was in Brenham, where he spoke to the Lions Club's Lyndon Johnson Day Supper; on the 26th he addressed the Kiwanis Club at Austin's Driskill Hotel; on the 27th he was back at the Driskill Hotel to speak before the Rotary; and on the 28th he left on a fourday campaign swing that took him to Cameron for dedication of a National Guard Armory, to Bryan for a Rotary Club luncheon, to Gladewater for dedication of a Youth Center, to

Austin for the Chamber of Commerce Banquet, to Paris for three speeches in two hours, to Clarksville for two speeches, to Texarkana for a number of talks, to Quitman for memorial services at Jim Hogg Park, and to Seguin for an address before the Homecoming Banquet of Texas Lutheran College.⁸⁷

6. The Age of Flight Comes to the Ranch

Lyndon Johnson was an enthusiastic air traveler. In the late summer, construction of a 3,570-foot gravel runway was commenced at the Ranch. This would facilitate campaigning. No longer would he have to drive to either Fredericksburg or Austin from Stonewall to board his recently purchased airplane.

On November 11 the Fredericksburg Standard informed its readers that Senator Johnson's air strip was "nearing completion" and was ready for its "final topping." A metal post and wire fence was being positioned to keep the Senator's cattle and sheep off the runway. A sheet metal hanger had been built and a beacon beam set up. On October 27 the Senator's plane had made a trial landing on the strip, and the next morning had flown the Majority Leader to Cameron.⁸⁸

Late in December, Lyndon Johnson was presented a four-year-old quarter horse by Tarrant County supporters at an appreciation dinner. Featuring this story, the Record-Courier observed, if Senator Johnson "decides to run in the 1960 Presidential Derby, he has a horse for the purpose."⁸⁹

Before returning to Washington on January 3, 1960, for the 2d Session of the 86th Congress, Johnson interviewed and hired Henry Blackburn as Ranch foreman. Meetings were also held with John Connally and others in regard to raising money to finance a campaign by Johnson to secure the Democratic Presidential nomination at Los Angeles in July.⁹⁰

L. The Democratic Party Nominates JFK and LBJ as its 1960 Standard Bearers

1. LBJ Campaigns for His Party's Presidential Nomination

Congress took its spring recess, and the Johnsons returned to the Ranch on Saturday, April 9, arriving in the LBJ Company's new Lodestar. The following Sunday, the 17th, Senator and Mrs. Johnson drove to Fredericksburg for morning services at St. Barnabas Episcopal Church and during the afternoon were at Austin's St. David's Church for Luci's confirmation. On Monday LBJ was in Johnson City for a Board of Director's meeting at the Citizens State Bank. Three days later, on the 21st, he flew to Houston, where, in the morning, he met with the executive committee of the local Johnson for President Club. At noon, he spoke before the State Convention of the Junior Chamber of Commerce at the Rice Hotel. That afternoon there was a reception at the Johnson for President Club at the Ben Milam Hotel, honoring the Senator and Mrs. Johnson. The Johnsons returned to the Ranch for a late supper.⁹¹

On April 22 the Johnsons left the Ranch by air on a campaign swing which took⁹² them to Denver and the Pacific Coast, and then back to Washington.

By the end of the Easter recess, Johnson was hearing from his friends that, although there had been no formal announcement of his candidacy, that if his name were placed before the convention, he could count on 319 votes from the states that had constituted the Confederacy. It also seemed probable that he would pick up perhaps 110 votes from the Border states, and another 100 in the Midwest and Mountain states. If these figures were correct, Johnson would have from 500 to 550 votes on the first ballot. Moreover, it did not seem that any of the other aspirants could muster the 761 votes needed to sew up the nomination on the first ballot. Then, it was reasoned by Johnson supporters, their man would be in position to gather in delegates who might be willing to switch.⁹³

As to be expected, the people of the Hill Country were in the forefront of the campaign to send their friend and neighbor to the White House. On Saturday evening, April 30, Blanco County residents held a Johnson for President rally in Johnson City. State Senator Charles Herring of Austin spoke in Johnson's behalf before a large crowd gathered in the PEC building. He urged those in attendance to select⁹⁴ delegates to the State Democratic Convention who would standby Johnson.

On Saturday, May 7, the Democratic voters of Texas went to the polls. In Gillespie County there was little interest, and only 532 ballots were cast, about one-half the 955 registered in the 1958 primary. Johnson received a big vote for re-nomination as United States Senator, as he did throughout the state. At the precinct meetings that evening, he was unanimously endorsed as the nominee of the Democratic party for the⁹⁵ Presidency.

One week later, on Saturday the 14th, Gillespie County Democrats held their county convention at the courthouse. With interest in the local candidate growing, it was better attended than any old-timers could recall. W. E. Fricke was elected permanent chairman and Art Kowert secretary.

A resolution was introduced and adopted by the convention endorsing Lyndon B. Johnson for the presidential nomination and instructing the delegation to the state convention "to back him all the way." The delegation to the June 14 Austin Convention was instructed to follow the unit rule. Mrs. Josefa Johnson Moss, the Majority Leader's sister, was selected as one of the delegates.

Gillespie, Senator Johnson's native county, "thus joined the parade of counties from throughout the width and breath of Texas to support their favorite-son for the Democratic presidential nomination."⁹⁶

2. Johnson Returns to Johnson City for a Commencement Address

Johnson returned to Texas two weeks after he was renominated to his Senate seat to deliver the commencement address at the high school from which he had graduated 36 years before. Informing the readers of the Record-Courier of this forthcoming event, Editor Stella Gliddon wrote that

this will be one of the "most memorable incidents" of the graduates' schooling, because they "would have a man, who, like them, once stood on the stage at this school to receive his diploma, to now deliver to them the most important address in their young lives."

Friday night, May 20, found the gymnasium crowded with more than 750 people to hear Johnson and to honor the 32 graduates, the largest class yet to be graduated from Johnson City High School. The Senator was accompanied by his wife, his daughter Luci, and Mary Margaret Wiley of his staff.

Speaking to the crowd, Johnson discussed the value of education, the dangers confronting the Nation, and told of his love for his hometown. When talking about the latter, he mentioned his father. Referring to him, the Majority Leader said that when his father was in Austin's Brackenridge Hospital, he had told his son that he wanted to come home to Johnson City, "where folks cared whether a friend lived or died."

Johnson informed his listeners that Chancellor Konrad Adenauer would be coming to the Hill Country for a visit in the near future. Referring to Nikita Krushchev's action following the U-2 incident, Senator Johnson stated that President Eisenhower came home from Paris "distressed and disappointed by the disgraceful conduct" of the Soviet leader.

3. Johnson Wins the Endorsement of the Texas Democrats

On Saturday, June 11, three days before the Austin Convention, Gillespie County friends and supporters of Senator Johnson for President held a barbecue at Fredericksburg's Klaerner's Park. The money raised, five dollars a plate, constituted Gillespie County's donation to the Johnson for President Fund. A welcome surprise was the unexpected appearance of the Senator. He was accompanied by his wife, his daughter Luci Baines, and key members of his staff.

Johnson was introduced to the group and spoke informally for more than 30 minutes. He expressed delight at being present, reporting that he had left Washington about midnight, had landed at the Ranch shortly after sun-up, and had spent a busy day. But, despite his schedule, he "wouldn't pass up the opportunity to attend and meet with his friends."

Many of Johnson's remarks were off the record, and not once did he mention the possibility that he might become the nominee of the Democratic Party for the Presidency. He, however, left his audience with the impression that here was a man who thoroughly understood the problems facing his country, and that "he was eminently qualified for the Nation's highest office."

Mrs. Johnson, when called upon, told how happy she was to be present. Next, Senator Johnson introduced 13-year-old Luci Baines, "as the speaking member of the family." Talking directly from the heart, she thrilled those in attendance by declaring, "I am so glad to be back on our Ranch in the Hill Country, where I know the people and people know me, and where I'm with my friends and we have fun together. I am so glad daddy and mother asked me to come with them to this barbecue. I've enjoyed it."

Another highlight of the evening was a drawing for tickets to Monday night's gala Johnson appreciation dinner in Austin, which were being sold for \$50 each. LBJ's was the second name drawn. Chuckling⁹⁸ as he declined to accept the ticket, he said, "I think I'll be there any how."

On Tuesday night, June 14, the State Democratic Convention meeting in Austin went all the way with LBJ, as it endorsed the Gillespie County native as Democratic nominee for the Presidency by a landslide vote. The Gillespie County delegation added their votes to the roll call of counties. A united Texas delegation would be going to Los Angeles in July.

Johnson had addressed the convention in the afternoon, and was flying back to Washington, when notified of its action.⁹⁹

4. Johnson Declares His Candidacy

Although he had corraled a large number of delegates to the National Democratic Convention, besides those of his home state, Johnson waited until Tuesday, July 5, to formally declare his intention to seek the nomination. He made the announcement in the New Senate Office building auditorium before a nationally televised Washington news conference.

On doing so, he took a jab at the front runner, Senator John F. Kennedy of Massachusetts, stating that "he hadn't come out for the nomination earlier because Congress was in session and somebody has to tend the store."

Johnson pictured himself as an experienced public official, one who had known "the presidency--and the men in it--intimately" since 1937. He informed his listeners that his friend Speaker Sam Rayburn, "the greatest Democrat of them all," would nominate him at the convention.¹⁰⁰

At Los Angeles, the Johnson forces found themselves in the minority, and on Wednesday, July 13, John F. Kennedy became the Democratic nominee for the Presidency. Correctly concluding that he could not win in November without Johnson, Kennedy shrewdly offered him the nomination for Vice President. Johnson, to the surprise of many friends and supporters, accepted. The convention, on the 14th, gave its stamp of approval and Johnson was nominated as Kennedy's running mate.¹⁰¹

M. The Kennedy-Johnson Campaign

1. The Johnsons Return from Los Angeles to a Rousing Welcome

On Saturday night, July 16, Senator Johnson and his party returned from Los Angeles to the Ranch. When the big silver Convair landed and taxied up to the hanger at 10:30, the Johnsons, on emerging from the craft, were greeted by more than 500 friends and neighbors. The crowd cheered and sang the "Eyes of Texas," to the accompaniment of a string band of local musicians.

The homecoming had been organized by Hill Country friends, and in attendance were many from Austin, San Antonio, and more distant parts, who

wanted to be on hand when their "favorite-son" and Vice Presidential nominee of the Democratic Party came home.

Mrs. Tom Weinheimer of Stonewall served as master of ceremonies for the welcoming party. She introduced Senator Johnson, who despite a gruelling week at the convention, spoke for 20 minutes.

"This homecoming reception is one of the nicest things that has ever happened to the Johnson family," he stated. He then reviewed for them the events of the week which found Senator Kennedy "seeking him out as a running mate."

The Johnson daughters, Lynda and Luci, spoke briefly. Luci "made a good speech," telling the group how happy she was to be back home." Lynda confided that she was at Disneyland the afternoon and evening of her father's nomination. Mrs. Johnson, gracious as always, added her words of appreciation to those of her husband and daughters for the wonderful welcome.

Tenth District Representative Thornberry of Austin, a family friend, was with the party. He told how proud the Texas delegation was of Johnson and the high honor accorded the state by his nomination.

Shucking his coat, Lyndon Johnson, joined by his family, stood under the hanger¹⁰² for another 30 minutes shaking hands and talking with admirers.

On the 20th the Johnsons flew to Acapulco, Mexico, for a three-day vacation, staying at former President Miguel Aleman's house. LBJ returned with a good tan and well rested to hold a press conference at the Ranch on Sunday afternoon, July 24. He told the reporters that he had talked at length by telephone with Senator Kennedy that morning. Within the near future, he continued, he would fly to Hyannis Port to discuss campaign plans with Kennedy. He also¹⁰³ touched on plans "to sweep the Democratic party to victory in November."

President Eisenhower, in the Nation's interest, issued orders for his top advisors to share confidential security information with the Presidential and Vice Presidential nominees of both the Republican and Democratic parties. In accordance with these instructions, Director Allen Dulles of the Central Intelligence Agency arrived at the LBJ Ranch on Wednesday evening, July 27. Next morning, following a late breakfast, Dulles spent two hours briefing Johnson. As a number of reporters were arriving for a noon press conference, a Dulles aide carefully locked up a brief case of documents his chief had been reviewing with the Majority Leader. Dulles and his aides then returned to Washington.¹⁰⁴

During the fourth week of July, the Republican National Convention, meeting in Chicago, nominated Richard M. Nixon for President and Henry Cabot Lodge for Vice President.

Displaying the energy that was his trademark, Johnson chartered a Viscount and flew 38 Texas newspaper correspondents and publishers to

Hyannis Port, on the 29th, to visit with Senator Kennedy and his people. He judged, correctly, that the Kennedy charm would have its effect on the way these media people covered the story of the autumn contest.

Speaking to the group, Kennedy observed that Johnson would carry out the obligations of the Vice Presidency "better in the public interest than any Vice President in recent time."¹⁰⁵

2. Blanco County Gives Its Hero a Day

Soon after Johnson's return from Los Angeles, Mayors George Byars of Johnson City and Wayne Smith of Blanco issued proclamations declaring August 3, Lyndon B. Johnson Day in Blanco County. To honor "its native son," the citizens planned to go all-out for the Kennedy-Johnson ticket. The climax of the day's activities would be a barbecue dinner at Blanco State Park. The feast was scheduled for 7 o'clock, with dignitaries from the entire state invited. Some would be expected to make speeches.

Public announcements of the forthcoming event pointed out that Blanco County was proud that "a hometown boy has reached the high goal of a lifetime." One of the smallest populated counties of Texas, Blanco County "felt honored to claim Senator Johnson as its own." That was the reason for the barbecue, and all receipts would go to the "Lyndon Johnson for vice-president committee to be used in furthering the campaign."¹⁰⁶

Although August 3 was a Wednesday, the crowd arrived early at the state park. Some groups came from as far away as Del Rio and Larado, bringing with them Latin-American bands to add to the festive air.

Seeing that the crowd, estimated at more than 5,000 was already on hand, the cooks started serving the people barbecue and trimmings at 6 P.M., in hopes that all could be fed by 8 o'clock, when Senator Johnson and his party would be seated on the platform which had been built for the occasion.

It was a little after the designated hour when Master of Ceremonies Bob McKinney, County Democratic Chairman, called the meeting to order. The first speakers were Mayors Byars of Johnson City and Smith of Blanco, the host communities, who welcomed the crowd to Blanco County.

Next, Chairman McKinney introduced those seated on the platform--Governor and Mrs. Price Daniel, Senator and Mrs. Ralph Yarborough, Representative and Mrs. Homer Thornberry, Mr. and Mrs. Bryson Skelton, Ed Connally, Senator and Mrs. Johnson, and their daughter Lynda Bird. First to speak was Representative Thornberry; followed by Senator Yarborough, leader of the liberal faction of the Texas Democratic Party; and then Governor Daniel, head of the party's dominate conservative wing.

Before presenting Senator Johnson, McKinney introduced Mrs. Johnson and Lynda Bird. Mrs. Johnson, in her gracious manner, thanked the people for coming, while Lynda Bird echoed her mother's sentiments.

When McKinney introduced Johnson, the crowd went wild. There was applause, shouts, and stomping of feet. Johnson began by reminiscing. He told of his mother growing up in Blanco, of his father's and family's long association with Johnson City, and of his father's service in the state legislature. "While mama was helping students over some rough places in school work, papa was sitting out in front on the front porch with some pension seeker, probably a Civil War veteran, or his widow, or a Spanish-American War veteran, or even a veteran of World War I."

He then turned serious. He told of the "nation's great peril. Of how Krushchev was attempting to disgruntle the people of our nation, and of the great need for unity among our people, even though an election was coming up, where every citizen should exercise their privilege to go and vote."

Johnson warned of creeping Communism that "could best be conquered economically." He told of vast quantities of wheat and cotton stored in warehouses all over the Nation at great expense to the government. "There is one-third of the world, who are starving," he shouted. "If we would share with the starving people of the world our surplus of wheat and cotton; if we would put bread into these empty stomachs and clothes on their naked backs, we could come nearer, much nearer, to proving to the people of the world, what life in a free country means. If we do this we will again be the leading nation of the world, a nation that other people will love and respect."

Johnson next turned to the coming campaign. He reminded each of the importance of their own thinking and to carefully weigh the Kennedy-Johnson and Nixon-Lodge platforms.

After almost two hours, Johnson finished his speech. A burst of applause ensued, as Gillespie County partisans staged an impromptu parade with banners heralding their support of Johnson.¹⁰⁷

Two days later, on the 5th, Senator Johnson made a one-day campaign foray, which took him to Bonham to pick up Speaker Rayburn and on to Oklahoma City. There, he spoke at a barbecue at the Kermac Ranch and attended a reception given in his and Mrs. Johnson's honor by his friend Senator Robert Kerr. Returning by way of Bonham, the Johnson Lodestar landed at the Ranch at 8 P.M.¹⁰⁸

3. Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson Hit the Campaign Trail

Congress was scheduled to reconvene on August 8, and Lyndon Johnson made plans to return to Washington on the 7th. He had read that Gerald Schmidt, a 16-year-old Gillespie County farm boy and winner of a contest as Texas' champion teenage driver, would also be traveling to the Nation's capital to participate in the national competition. He called Schmidt and invited him to ride with him. A thrilled 16-year-old accepted.

On Sunday morning, at 9 A.M., Schmidt and five officials of the Fredericksburg Junior Chamber of Commerce were at the Ranch. As Johnson guests, they¹⁰⁹ boarded with their host his big silver Convair and took off for Washington.

Congress adjourned on September 1, and the battle lines drawn, the Kennedy-Johnson and Nixon-Lodge tickets during the next eight weeks carried their causes to the voters. While Senator Johnson flew to his many and widely scattered speaking engagements, Mrs. Johnson, now a seasoned campaigner, undertook a separate and full-scale assignment. The LBJ Ranch served the Johnsons' as their campaign headquarters. The landing strip and highways provided ready and easy access to people coming and going. Johnson made extensive use of his Lodestar and Convair, and added extra telephone facilities to make the rambling ranch house function more efficiently as a political nerve center.¹¹⁰

On Saturday, September 10, Stonewall whooped it up, as it commemorated its centennial with a day-long celebration. The community was jam-packed with a crowd estimated at between 8,000 and 10,000 to watch the 10 A.M. parade which inaugurated the day's activities. Mrs. Lyndon Johnson and daughter Lynda Bird rode in a stage coach. For the parade Highway 290 from its junction with the Blanco Farm-to-Market Road to the place where the old road (today's Ranch Road 1) diverged, a distance of 1.3 miles, was "lined solid with cars." Most of these remained for the afternoon's festivities, to be joined by many more for the evening program honoring Lyndon B. Johnson.

Simon Burg introduced Johnson and his daughters to the crowd. Knowing that Al Smith's Catholic religion had cost him Texas and several other Southern states in the 1928 presidential election, Johnson made a pitch for religious toleration. He reminded his audience, many of whom were descendants of German emigrants who had migrated to Texas following the failure of the 1848 revolution, that "their forefathers and his came to Gillespie, because this country offered a religious freedom which Europe of 100 and 150 years ago didn't."

He urged them to practice this religious toleration today, remarking, "Its not important what church you worship God in. What's important is that you believe in God."

"We are facing the atheistic Communists," he stated as the crowd urged him on, "who are trying to divide us by setting race against race and religion against religion."

Johnson recalled that his father, in 1918, as a state representative had put his career on the line in his successful fight to prevent passage of a law by the state legislature "to outlaw speaking the German language in Texas."

Otto Lindig, a local celebrity, made a short speech lauding Lyndon Johnson, whom he had known since his birth,¹¹¹ and then presented Johnson with a pair of handmade German silver spurs.

For the second time within twelve months, former President Truman visited the LBJ Ranch. As on the first occasion, he was accompanied by Speaker Rayburn. These two Democratic leaders and hard-working campaigners for the Kennedy-Johnson slate spent the afternoon of October 8 on the banks of the Pedernales. They traveled to the Ranch from San Antonio, where Truman had addressed a party fund raising dinner on Monday night. At the Ranch they headed a delegation of notables at a barbecue and

workshop, attended by more than 600 Texas Democratic campaign workers. Truman and Rayburn, along with other party leaders, spoke at the meeting which was closed to the press.

Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson, although they hosted the gathering, were unable to attend. Deeply involved in their vital "whistle stop" campaign through the South, they were compelled to send their regrets.

At mid-afternoon, several hours before the rally broke up, Truman and Rayburn said goodbye¹¹² and motored to Waco, where they had an evening speaking engagement.

Mrs. Johnson was back at the Ranch on Monday, the 17th, when she hosted more than 50 lady members of the fourth estate from all parts of Texas. The ladies arrived before noon and spent the hour before lunch chatting with each other and Mrs. Johnson.

After eating, Mrs. Johnson told of plans for a second tea party swing through the Lone Star State. Her first whirl through Texas, accompanied by one of Senator Kennedy's sisters and a sister-in-law, had been successful. Hundreds of ladies had turned out at every stop to listen to the three campaigners.

Mrs. Johnson reported that since the first tour, many women from cities and towns where they had not appeared and called and urged them to make a second tour and include their areas on the itinerary.

The ladies of the press, who had enjoyed the hospitality, left reluctantly, bidding¹¹³ goodbye to "Lady Bird," as Mrs. Johnson was affectionately known.

During the last week of the campaign, after having appeared in 43 of the 50 states at "every sort of political rally and parade, indoors and out," Johnson spent his time cementing his Texas base.¹¹⁴

4. The Nation's Voters Turn to Kennedy and Johnson

The Nation went to the polls on Tuesday, November 8, and in the closest election since 1916, the Kennedy-Johnson ticket defeated the Republican candidates. On Wednesday, the Fredericksburg Standard informed its readers that on Tuesday, Gillespie County "became the home of the next vice president of the United States." But, continued the editor, Gillespie can "claim little credit for the election of one of its sons to the second highest office in the nation, and one who becomes next in line for the presidency." Gillespians remained true to tradition and to the party of their forebearers by casting 2,687 votes for the Nixon-Lodge ticket and 816 for Kennedy and Johnson. The only precinct in the county giving a majority to the Democratic victors was Stonewall, the one in which the Johnsons resided. Stonewall electors favored Kennedy and Johnson by 89 votes to 42.

Blanco County, however, remained safely Democratic, favoring the Kennedy-Johnson ticket by 830 to 567.

Gillespie County not only failed to support the Democratic ticket nationally, but "went Republican down the line." Although re-elected to the United States Senate, Johnson lost his home county to John Tower by a vote of 2,462 to 1,228. Voters in the Stonewall precinct favored the local hero by 92 to 47. As they had 12 years before, Gillespians preferred the party of their fathers and grandfathers to the one championed by their friend and neighbor.

Over in Blanco County, Johnson trounced Tower for Senator by a vote of 1,018 to 482.¹¹⁵

Commenting on the election, Editor Gliddon of the Record-Courier wrote, "laying away partisan politics, Blanco County folks rejoiced in that a native son was named to the second highest office in the United States." Congratulatory messages from his "fellow county residents" had inundated Johnson long before Nixon and Lodge conceded defeat.

"Once again," Mrs. Gliddon continued, "we feel that we are justified in our claim that Blanco County produces men and women of greatness." Vice Presidentelect Johnson "is a graduate of Johnson City High School. Here the first educational foundation was laid, an education from what was then a rural high school that sent him to the second highest post. Is it any wonder that Blanco County folks are happy and proud?"¹¹⁶

5. The President-Elect Visits the Ranch

After their narrow victory, Johnson flew to Florida to meet with Kennedy to begin the process of setting up a new administration. On Wednesday, November 16, Kennedy returned the visit. He landed at the Johnson air strip at 5:55 P.M., flying in a light plane from Bergstrom Air Force Base, where his jet had landed. Kennedy was preceded to the Ranch by two plane loads of newsmen. On his arrival Kennedy was welcomed by Mr. and Mrs. Johnson, as the reporters and photographers crowded around the airplane, "like fans rushing out to congratulate their winning football team at the end of the game."

As the two men shook hands, Kennedy lauded Johnson, telling the media people that the Texan "would be of great assistance in implementing the Democratic party's commitment to the American people."

The Johnsons escorted Kennedy into the hanger, where he was introduced to Simon Burg and 18 citizens of Stonewall and a like number from Blanco County. Burg, on behalf of the group, presented the President-elect with a white Stetson and leather carrying case. He then congratulated Kennedy and wished him success as the Nation's 35th President. Kennedy was asked to try on the hat, but demonstrating an unexpected lack of grace declined.

Kennedy, leaving the hanger, got into the front seat of a waiting convertible with his hosts. With Lyndon Johnson at the wheel, they made a brief tour of the Ranch. They were trailed by a bus load of correspondents. A heavy rain and darkness shortened the tour.

That evening Kennedy and Johnson, after dinner, were joined by Governor Price Daniel, Senator Ralph Yarborough, and Lieutenant Governor Ben Ramsey. The bad weather prevented the attendance of Speaker Sam Rayburn.

Next morning Johnson took his guest deer hunting on the Wesley West Ranch. Kennedy, although it was subsequently reported that he had an aversion to the sport, killed two bucks, a six-and an eight-pointer, becoming the "most celebrated deer hunter in the area's history."

After the hunt, as they had on the previous evening, Kennedy and Johnson discussed plans for their administration, which would take office in eight weeks.

On Thursday afternoon, Kennedy returned to Bergstrom. As he was preparing to board the jet to take him back to his Palm Beach, Florida, vacation spot, Kennedy told the press that he and Johnson had had "a long profitable discussion" of plans and programs to be implemented by their administration, along with conversations on problems involved in effecting an orderly transition of administrations.

Gillespie County friends and neighbors of the Johnsons at this time became acquainted with the Secret Service. While the President-elect was at the Ranch, the Secret Service enforced security measures, and all cars entering and leaving the Ranch were stopped.¹¹⁷

IV. THE VICE PRESIDENTIAL YEARS: 1961-63

A. Johnson Proves to be an Asset to the Administration

1. He is Inaugurated as 39th Vice President

Vice President-elect Lyndon Johnson and his family spent the Christmas Season at the LBJ Ranch. They returned to Washington early in the new year to enable Lyndon to be present when the 1st Session of the 87th Congress convened on January 3, 1961.

On January 6, two weeks before the inauguration, Mayor Byars of Johnson City proclaimed the "week of January 16th through January 22d, 1961, as Lyndon B. Johnson week" in the old hometown. Three days before the "big event," at the Gillespie County Airport, Mr. and Mrs. Oscar Bobbitt and their son Philip, Mr. and Mrs. J.D. Moss and their son Rodney, and Sam Houston Johnson boarded the plane that would take them to Washington to see their beloved Lyndon sworn in as Vice President.

A heavy snow blanketed the Nation's Capital, on January 20, when John F. Kennedy was inaugurated as 35th President of the United States and Johnson as the Vice President. Coincidentally, Johnson resigned his seat in the Senate.

On January 20, to commemorate the occasion, Editor Gliddon of the Record-Courier published a special Lyndon B. Johnson edition, featuring articles about the local boy who made good.

To show his appreciation, Vice President Johnson wrote Mrs. Gliddon:

My dear Stella:

The Inaugural Edition of the Johnson City Record-Courier was splendid and equal to any of the editions I saw of the big-city papers. You are to be congratulated on the excellent job which you did.

Although I usually save only clippings and tear sheets from newspapers, in this instance I am keeping the entire edition among my cherished records. Since I think you deserve a medal for a job well done, I am sending one [an inaugural medal] for you.

Sincerely,

Lyndon

President Kennedy, during the next thousand days, utilized Johnson's talents and energies in a number of assignments and special missions. Johnson was given a suite in the Executive Office Building, next door to 1600 Pennsylvania Avenue. The Vice President wisely and predictably retained his big office in the Capitol and his suite in the new Senate Office Building. Besides presiding over the Senate, the busy Vice President chaired the National Aeronautics and Space Council and directed the work of the Committee on Equal Employment Opportunity. Though the size of the staffs under his immediate direction were pared when he left his position as Majority Leader, he retained key personnel in their accustomed positions, and pushed them as hard as heretofore on the numerous responsibilities given him as Vice President.

2. A Tragedy-Marred Ranch Weekend

One of the first assignments President Kennedy gave Lyndon Johnson was to make on-site inspections of the Nation's space installations and research centers. During the recent campaign, Kennedy had charged the Republicans with a failure during the Eisenhower Administration to give sufficient priority to this program, thereby allowing the Soviet Union to take the initiative in space exploration. President Kennedy, on taking office, had committed the United States to taking the lead in this field, with the goal of placing a man on the moon by 1970.

After visiting the Houston space facility, the Vice President flew to his Ranch late Tuesday, February 14, "for his first brief visit since being inaugurated to the nation's second highest office." When Editor Art Kowert of the Fredericksburg Standard telephoned the Ranch, on Wednesday morning, to ask about Johnson's visit, his aides were noncommittal. From neighbors, Kowert learned that the LBJ Airport lights had been aglow late Tuesday and an airplane had landed.

Tragedy marred this trip to the Ranch and Texas. At 7:16 P.M., on Sunday, the 19th, Johnson's pilot Harold Teague and co-pilot Charles Williams left Austin in his silver Convair 240. A light drizzle was falling and there was a ground fog. The plan was to spend the night at the Ranch, so they would be ready "bright and early" on the 20th to fly the Vice President, Mrs. Johnson, and his staff back to Washington.

The plane arrived over the Ranch as scheduled and radioed to ask if the lights on the landing strip were turned on. Pilot Teague was informed that they were. He replied that he could not see them through the fog and that he was returning to Austin. A few minutes later radio contact ceased and a search led by Johnson commenced for the missing plane. The search centered on the rugged countryside northwest of the Ranch, in which direction the Convair was traveling when last heard. Many of the searchers were ranchers on horseback.

No sign of the missing airplane was reported until 9 A.M., the next morning. Rancher Emil Hartmann and companions at that hour discovered the Convair scattered over a rugged hillside on the Hartmann ranch in the Pleasant Hill community, ten air miles south of the LBJ Ranch. Teague and Williams, who had flown Johnson thousands of miles during the past campaign, were dead.

The Vice President, on being notified that the crash site had been located, sped to the scene. After viewing the wreckage, he returned to the main road and, calling newsmen to his car, told them, "I've just lost the best pilot in the world and two of my dearest friends."

Returning to the Ranch to pick up Mrs. Johnson, the Vice President drove into Austin to convey his personal sympathy to Teague's widow. "He was like a member of our family," the grieving Johnson explained to the press.

3. Johnson as a Goodwill Ambassador to the Third World

In the field of foreign relations, President Kennedy laid out a new and multifaceted role for Lyndon Johnson. One of these was associated with the Peace Corps. Johnson's tasks were to help guide the enabling legislation through Congress and to help Sargent Shriver, the President's brother-in-law, locate talent to launch the Peace Corps, and then to monitor its development.

Coincident with this activity, Lyndon Johnson was asked by JFK to represent the United States in Dakar at ceremonies celebrating the independence of Senegal, an emerging West African nation. Preparatory to their departure, Vice President and Mrs. Johnson spent the last week of March at the LBJ Ranch. They left for Africa on Saturday, April 1, the day before Easter. En route back to the United States, the Johnsons stopped for short visits in Paris, Geneva, and Spain.

The trip was fast paced and hectic, but Johnson returned to the United States with vivid memories of the poverty and misery he saw in many places in and around Dakar. Thus, he came back to Washington with renewed determination to promote, through the Peace Corps and every other possible channel, any viable plans presented to assist the backward countries to help themselves. In Senegal, as in other Third World places he visited on subsequent missions, Johnson

walked among the people, in the market places, visiting, in their homes, shaking hands and giving away LBJ souvenir ballpoint pens. He "pressed the flesh and looked them in the eye."

4. Chancellor Adenauer's April 16-17 Visit

The Johnsons' return to Washington was hastened by the pending visit to the United States by West German Chancellor Konrad Adenauer. Some two years before on a previous trip to the Nation, Adenauer had told Johnson that he wanted to see Texas. He now took steps to keep his promise. Taking time off from his busy schedule, Adenauer and Johnson flew to Texas, on Sunday, April 16.

When the elderly but spry Chancellor stepped off his airplane at Bergstrom Air Force Base, he was welcomed by Governor Price Daniel and other notables, as the base band played the German National Anthem and the Star Spangled Banner. They then boarded helicopters for the 30-minute flight to the Hill Country.

Accompanied by Johnson, Adenauer and his daughter, Mrs. Libeth Werhahn, arrived in Gillespie County shortly before 1 P.M. The choppers landed on the Stonewall school grounds. From there, the official party was driven to St. Francis Xavier, where Adenauer attended a special mass at which Father W. Schneider officiated. The text chosen by Father Schneider was, "I am the Good Shepherd." As the Chancellor, Vice President Johnson, and Mrs. Werhahn emerged from the church, Adenauer was presented a bouquet of blue bonnets by Gina L. Klein. From mass, Adenauer and Johnson were helicoptered to the LBJ Ranch. They were met by Mrs. Johnson and whisked into the home for a few minutes relaxation.

Waiting outside had been a surrey "with a fringe on top," to take the Chancellor to a barbecue the Johnsons were hosting in his honor. One of the helicopters so frightened the horse, however, that it was thought best not to use the surrey. Consequently, on emerging from the house, the Johnsons drove the Chancellor to the barbecue in a sleek convertible. By the time they reached the oak grove, near the dam, a crowd of between 400 and 500 had gathered to welcome them. Guests had started gathering long before the hour designated for the barbecue. But time had not dragged, as old friends greeted one another, and exchanged pleasantries with the Germans who were members of the press corps in the Chancellor's party.

Although the food was trucked in by an Austin catering service (Mary Kooch's), some savory ribs were being barbecued over an open pit. A large ham on a nearby table was sliced for "a tasty tidbit" for Chancellor Adenauer.

The head table was positioned on an awning-covered platform, to enable the crowd to see the visitors. The Germans, from the Chancellor and his daughter to the correspondents, gave every evidence of enjoying the Texas-style luncheon on the banks of the Pedernales, which featured sliced barbecue and ribs, potato salad, brown beans, slaw, pickles, bread and butter, and whatever drink one desired.

After the crowd had eaten, there was an informal program. Simon Burg acted as toastmaster and introduced the distinguished guests. Among the highlights was Lyndon Johnson's presentation to Chancellor Adenauer of a modified Stetson.

Before continuing on to Fredericksburg, the Chancellor and Vice President were joined by Fleet Admiral Chester W. Nimitz, retired. The Fredericksburg native and World War II leader and his wife Catherine had landed at the LBJ Ranch on the final leg of a flight that had brought them from Berkeley, California, to Bergstrom Air Force base. As Mrs. Nimitz was not feeling well, she decided to remain at the Ranch, while her husband joined the official party.

A crowd of more than 7,000 had gathered at Gillespie Fair Park, and gave Adenauer, Nimitz, and Johnson "a tremendous reception." The West German leader seemed to enjoy every minute. Making a brief address, he told of his great pleasure at being able to visit Fredericksburg.

The Vice President and his two distinguished guests returned to the Ranch for a private Sunday evening dinner. It was held under a tent pitched over the asphalt paving north of the home. Some likened the ornate tent, with its red carpeting, to a "movie version of Arabian Nights." The menu featured chicken, Italian green beans, hot rolls, chocolate cake, and whatever the guests desired to drink.

On Monday, the guests said their goodbyes and departed. Johnson accompanied Adenauer to Austin, where the West German Chancellor addressed a joint session of the legislature. While doing so, he several times referred to the great pleasure derived from "his Hill Country visit."

B. Two Pakistanis Visit the Hill Country

1. A Fateful Trip to Southeast Asia

Soon after saying farewell to the West Germans, the busy Vice President and Mrs. Johnson, accompanied by diplomatic and military advisors from the State Department and Pentagon, left Andrews Air Force Base, near Washington, in a jet airplane, on their first trip around the world. President Kennedy had given Johnson the difficult task of meeting leaders of various Southeastern Asian countries. The fate by South Vietnam in its struggle against the Communist Viet Cong was of particular interest, and Kennedy wanted Johnson's assessment of the situation.

The Johnsons' travels took them to Hong Kong, Manila, Tai-pei, and Saigon. LBJ's "appraisals and later reports on South Vietnam, particularly turned out to be a vital prelude in the massive intervention" in that unhappy nation. Stops were made in Bangkok and New Delhi. At each of these places, there were lavish entertainments for the visitors from the United States. Lyndon Johnson, the populist and tireless campaigner, took every opportunity to walk into the crowds, who had gathered to see the tall American and his party to shake hands ("press the flesh"), smile, and tell one and all how great it was to be among the people. Such unorthodox conduct "shocked his State Department and military escort but it pleased the people."

Large numbers of Pakistanis consequently turned out to hail the Vice President and his party when they landed at Karachi. While en route from the airport to the presidential palace, the Johnson motorcade crept along through the masses. At the first crowd-caused stop, Johnson piled out of the limousine and began shaking hands. As he waded into the multitude, he kept repeating, "Howdy... hi there... glad to see you... nice to meet you... come to see us sometime." His actions touched a responsive cord with the people.

At an intersection, as Johnson strode through the throng, he spotted a "sturdy, smiling man, clad in the white cotton garments of a worker, standing beside a camel-drawn cart waiting for a chance to cross the avenue with his load of stacked straw." LBJ offered the Pakistani his hand and warmly greeted the camel driver. Through an interpreter, Johnson told the camel driver that he would like him to visit Texas. The chance meeting was recorded by cameramen, and the Vice President moved on. Somewhat delayed, he finally reached the presidential palace, where Gen. Mohammed Ayub Khan was waiting.

Not for several hours had anyone realized that Pakistan's most widely read newspaper columnist and been watching and listening, when Johnson had greeted the camel driver. The columnist's story of the incident was to provide impetus to "a new and different kind of diplomacy."

During the course of his discussions with General Ayub Khan, Johnson extended to him from President Kennedy an invitation to visit the United States in the near future.⁷ The Pakistani leader accepted, and his visit was scheduled for mid-summer.

From Pakistan, the Johnsons flew back to Washington with brief stops at Athens and Bermuda.

Vice President Johnson and his family took advantage of the congressional recess for July 4 to spend a few days at the Ranch. While there, Johnson attended Fredericksburg's Fourth of July Festival.

On Sunday afternoon, the 2d, the opening day, Johnson showed his famed Tennessee Walking Horse, Lady B. The crowd oohed and awed as she was put through her paces in front of the grandstand by Henry Blackburn, the LBJ Ranch foreman.

In accordance with Johnson's wishes, no public announcement of his presence in the grandstand was made on Sunday and Monday. But on Tuesday, the final day of the celebration, he was introduced to the crowd and given a standing ovation. He told the people that he was "a plain, ordinary citizen of Gillespie County, and was having fun relaxing among the people of his home country."⁸

2. President Ayub Khan's Mid-July 1961 Visit

In mid-July 1961 President Ayub Khan, having accepted President Kennedy's invitation, arrived in the United States. He and his party received an enthusiastic welcome to Washington, climaxed by a candle light dinner on the lawn of Mount Vernon hosted by President and Mrs. Kennedy.

On Saturday, July 15, President Khan and his entourage, escorted by Gen. Lyman Lemnitzer, Chief of Staff of the Nation's armed forces, his wife, and State Department officials, flew to Texas, landing at Randolph Air Force Base. After receiving a military salute, Ayub Khan visited the Alamo for a wreath laying ceremony, then motored to the San Antonio International Airport for the helicopter ride to the LBJ Ranch.

It was late afternoon before the Johnsons and their guests reached the Ranch. On Saturday evening, the Johnsons, the Pakistanis, and 60 prominent Texans sat down to an elegant southern-style meal in the front yard. The moonlight was brightened by colorful Japanese lanterns strung among the live oaks. After they had eaten, they were entertained by an agua ballet in the flood-lighted, kidney-shaped pool staged by the University of Texas.

The Johnsons had scheduled one of their famed Texan barbecues for Sunday afternoon. Throughout the morning and early afternoon, as the

Ranch employees and the caterer made preparations for the gala event, in the oak grove near the low water crossing, airplanes and automobiles from all parts of Texas were arriving. Guests, numbering more than 500, included bankers, lawyers, publishers, representatives of the media, politicians, ranchers, farmers, and neighbors. Some had traveled many hundreds of miles. The Johnsons also had thoughtfully invited 55 Pakistani students from Texas colleges to greet their Chief of State.

A raised platform draped with red, white, and blue bunting, and flying the United States and Pakistan flags, gave the crowd a focal point. Eddie Arnold, "The Tennessee Plowboy," twanged his electric guitar and sang country and western songs.

Johnson and his guests now emerged from the Ranch house. LBJ and President Khan, the Vice President at the wheel, drove down the road to the barbecue site in an electric golf cart. A Mexican mariachi band led the way. A long table in front of the platform was reserved for the official party.

President Khan and Vice President Johnson now mounted the platform to speak to the "relaxed but intent crowd." The Pakistani leader was introduced by Johnson, who referred to him as "one of the great men of the world." Speaking bluntly, in faultless English, Ayub Khan challenged "the United States to meet its responsibilities as the leader of the World's free nations."

After the President had finished his address, he was presented several gifts. Lyndon Johnson gave him a saddle made by A.W. Maier Saddle Shop of Fredericksburg, three Texas-style hats, a pair of spurs, and a leather-trimmed hunting jacket. Mrs. Johnson presented him with a set of 12 dinner plates depicting Texas scenes.

The foreign visitors and guests then sat down to an "informal barbeque." They had a choice of barbecued beef, pork, or chicken, as a main course, served with Texas pinto beans, cole slaw, potato salad, fresh onions, pickles, hot rolls and jelly, with a choice of tea or coffee. While they ate, the entertainment continued. There were more songs by Eddie Arnold and music by the mariachi band and Rosalita of San Antonio. Afterwards Marty Allen of Bracketville put his trained palamino horses through their paces.

That evening, after the guests had departed, Lyndon Johnson suggested a drive through the beautiful Pedernales countryside. They had much to discuss.

The Pakistani president was a man cast in LBJ's mould. Both men played to and understood constituencies that survived on limited amounts of rainfall. The first question Johnson would ask a visiting dignitary was invariably, "How much rainfall does your country have?" A man of the land, where percipitation was vital, LBJ's early political life had been shaped by bringing water to a region, where the annual rainfall measured about 27 inches. President Khan understood this, because the average yearly percipitation in his country's western reaches was under 9 inches.

Mrs. Johnson likewise long recalled the Pakistanis' visit, and the sight of the ladies in President Khan's entourage strolling along the Pedernales. She took her sari-clad guests on a drive through the hills to see the deer, and sought to "match tall tales" with them." We had some Texas rattlesnake stories to tell," she chuckled, "but nothing to equal their tales at boa constrictors in Pakistan."¹⁰

On Monday morning, the 17th, President Khan flew to Austin, where he addressed a joint-session of the legislature before continuing on to New York City.¹¹

3. The Johnsons Meet a Camel Driver

A much less important Pakistani was a guest of the Johnsons in mid-October, but his visit to the United States and the LBJ Ranch, because of the human interest involved, generated far more publicity. Not long after the departure of Ayub Khan, Lyndon Johnson, while reading translations of extracts from far eastern newspapers to gauge the reactions of the people to his recent visit to that region, came across an item that sparked his interest. A digest from a Karachi paper described Johnson's encounter with the Pakistani camel driver, Bashir Ahmed. Just imagine, the columnist had written, the Vice President of the United States taking time to meet a camel driver and to invite him to Texas.

The words "invite him to Texas," rang a bell, and Johnson moved promptly to capitalize on the situation. He engaged State Department officers to check into Bashir's background and character. Arrangements were made through People-to-People, an organization promoting good will between nations, to fly Bashir from Karachi to New York City.¹²

On Sunday, October 15, Lyndon Johnson, accompanied by Lady Bird and Liz Carpenter, the Pakistani ambassador, and several State Department officials, flew from Washington to New York City to meet the plane bringing the camel driver to the Western Hemisphere. Word had reached the Johnsons that several of the media were planning to assign their "funniest" writers to cover the visit. Johnson was not amused, and, while awaiting his guest's arrival, telephoned the presidents of Associated Press and United Press International and asked that their services provide statesman-like coverage to Bashir's visit.

"I've been in Southeast Asia," he explained,

and what we need on our side are the camel drivers of the world. The whole world will be watching this reception, and listening to what is said about Bashir. He is my guest, and I think it would be cruel and foolish for us to poke fun at him in print.¹³

Information now reached the Vice President that the airplane would be four hours late. Johnson was scheduled to make a speech in San Antonio that afternoon, but he insisted that his guest was entitled to a warm and personal welcome. He therefore rushed off Lady Bird and Liz to Texas. The former was to substitute for him at the San Antonio political rally in behalf of

Henry Gonzales, and the latter to urge local reporters not to make sport of Bashir in their stories. Both women successfully discharged their missions and were waiting at the Ranch, when the plane bearing Lyndon and his guest arrived.

Lyndon took Bashir on a tour of the Ranch, driving him about in an electric golf cart. He pointed out the cemetery, where his parents and grandparents were buried, and the frame house then standing on the site of the cottage in which he had been born.

That evening they watched the news on television, and when Bashir saw the coverage featuring his arrival in New York City, he exclaimed, "How can I be here when I am there?"

That night Bashir slept in the same bed that his president, General Ayub Khan, had occupied three months before.¹⁴

Lyndon and Lady Bird were desirous that their guest not be harassed by too many members of the press, so LBJ decreed that correspondents were only to tag along on their Monday morning tour of the Ranch and Johnson City visit. At Johnson City, they inspected the PEC headquarters building. Here, the Vice President explained how electricity had come to the Hill Country within the last 25 years. They then motored to the Johnson City High School, where Johnson and his sister, Mrs. Moss, addressed the student body. At noon the group returned to the Ranch, where Bashir was to be the honored guest at one of the Johnson's popular barbecues.

While at the PEC facility, Johnson had had a change of heart about the media people and had telephoned the Ranch to tell Lady Bird, "Honey, I'm bringing these reporters home with us for lunch."

As on the occasion of President Khan's visit both the United States and Pakistani flags were flying, with an avenue of banners leading to the oak grove barbecue site.

The barbecue was catered by Emil Brick of Fredericksburg, and present were Hill Country friends and neighbors of the Johnsons. After everyone had feasted, there was a brief program. Bashir was presented a Stonewall Centennial Plate and a copy of The History of Stonewall, Texas, 1860-1960. Bashir, who spoke no English, expressed his thanks for the gifts through his State Department interpreter, an ex-Bengal lancer.

Late that afternoon, Johnson, Bashir, and the interpreter mounted three horses, saddled by Henry Blackburn, and went for a ride across the range. As the trio cantered along inspecting the Johnson cattle, Bashir exclaimed that his horse rode "smoother than a camel."

On Monday evening, Walter Prescott Webb and J. Frank Dobie, distinguished southwestern historians, briefed Bashir on the history and folklore of the region.¹⁵

On Tuesday, the 17th, the Johnsons took Bashir to the State Fair in Dallas. The next morning Lyndon, having a number of speaking commite-

ments, bid his guest a fond goodbye at the Ranch. Liz Carpenter then accompanied Bashir to Kansas City for a visit to the People-to-People headquarters, an early morning cattle auction, a drive to the Truman Library in nearby Independence, and a handshake with the former President. They then flew to Washington, where Mrs. Johnson was waiting.¹⁶

C. The Johnsons Have Their Share of Grief

1. "Lyndon's a Good Man to Have Around in an Emergency"

On November 16, 1961, Vice President and Mrs. Johnson were en route from Washington to Phoenix, Arizona, to attend a dinner celebrating Senator Carl Hayden's fiftieth year in Congress when they learned that their dear friend, Speaker of the House Sam Rayburn, was dead. With heavy hearts they attended the party and were making plans to fly to Bonham for Mr. Sam's funeral, when Mrs. Johnson received a telephone call from Santa Fe. She was told that her only surviving brother, Tony, had been felled by a serious heart attack.

Lyndon responded with characteristic alacrity. He chased down by telephone his personal specialist Dr. Willis Hurst in Atlanta and arranged for him to fly to Tony's bedside; he made flight reservations for both Dr. Hurst and Mrs. Johnson; and perfected arrangements to have them met at the Albuquerque airport. Then, after attending the Rayburn funeral in Bonham on the 18th, he joined Lady Bird in Santa Fe.

Recalling this crisis, Mrs. Johnson observed, Lyndon kept saying "you have only one brother," and all the time he knew my heart was stricken because I would not be able to be present at Sam Rayburn's funeral. But he made the decision and just sent me packing.

It was during these heart-rending days that Mrs. Johnson coined the now famous phrase, "Lyndon's a good man to have around in an emergency."

Tony¹⁷ Taylor, like Lyndon six years before, recovered from his coronary.

2. Death Haunts the Christmas Holidays

The 1st Session of the 87th Congress had adjourned on September 27, thus permitting Vice President Johnson to spend most of December in the Hill Country. He went hunting frequently at the Scharnhorst, A. W. Moursund's, and in Llano County. Usually accompanying him were Mrs. Johnson, Mary Margaret Wiley, Dr. and Mrs. Bailey, and A. W. and Mariallen Moursund.

On Thursday, the 7th, he and Mrs. Johnson went for a drive with Dale Malechek and Henry Blackburn. The latter had served notice that he was going to leave the Ranch, and Malechek was being considered as Blackburn's replacement as Ranch foreman.

The 10th was Sunday, and at 9:30 A.M. Johnson received a telephone call from Roswell Gilpatrick, President Kennedy's Deputy Secretary of Defense

that John Connally was resigning as Secretary of the Navy and the Administration was considering Fred Korth as his replacement. During the day LBJ talked by phone with both Connally and Korth.

On the 17th Lyndon and Lady Bird drove from the Ranch into Austin. They were accompanied by Mary Margaret Wiley. From Austin, they flew in their Lodestar to Houston to attend a reception in their honor at the Lamar Hotel. They remained in Houston for the night, spending it at the Wesley West's. The next day, after attending the swearing in of Jim Noel as Federal District Judge for the Southern District of Texas, the Johnsons returned to Austin in the Lodestar, and had dinner and spent the evening in their fifth floor apartment at KTBC.¹⁸

Aunt Frank Martin, from whom the Johnsons had bought the Ranch ten years before, died in an Austin hospital on the day that Lyndon and Lady Bird flew to Houston. Until several weeks before her death, Aunt Frank had been living in the Boyhood Home, which Lyndon had traded her for the Ranch. Mrs. Martin was buried on Saturday, the 16th, in the Johnson Family Cemetery, her body being laid to rest beside that of her husband who had died in 1936. E. W. Banta, a Christadelphian minister from Houston, officiated at the 2 o'clock services at Crofts' Funeral Home. Among those in attendance were Vice President and Mrs. Johnson. The death of Mrs. Martin left Mrs. Jessie Hatcher¹⁹ of San Saba as the only surviving child of Sam and Eliza Bunton Johnson.

On Tuesday, the 19th, Vice President and Mrs. Johnson, accompanied by Mary Margaret Wiley, drove from the Ranch to Austin, where they boarded the Lodestar for the four-hour flight to the Nation's capital. LBJ, after attending a meeting of the National Security Council at the White House, had a quiet dinner at his Washington home with Mrs. Johnson and the girls. The next evening the Johnsons, their daughters, Cliff Carter, Mary Margaret Wiley, and Boyd Richie, were flown in an Air Force jet from Washington to the Ranch.

Death struck much closer early on Christmas morning. On Christmas eve, Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson hosted a traditional gathering of the family at the Ranch. Gifts were exchanged, with Lyndon doubling as Santa Claus. Among those in attendance were Mrs. Josefa Johnson Moss, her husband, and their son Rodney; Cousin Oreale Bailey; Lucia and Birge Alexander, and their daughter Becky; Sam Houston Johnson; Mr. and Mrs. Oscar Bobbitt and their son, Philip; and Mary Margaret Wiley. After returning to their home, at 501 East San Antonio Street, in Fredericksburg, Mrs. Moss suffered a cerebral hemorrhage and died. She was only 49.

An extremely striking and handsome woman, the deceased, like her father and brother, had loved politics. She had been active in all of Lyndon's campaigns. At the time of her death, she was a member of the State Democratic Committee, serving as committee woman from the 21st Congressional District.

Services were held at Crofts' Funeral Home in Johnson City, on December 26, at 2 o'clock, with the Reverend Silas Howell of Llano's Church of Christ officiating. Graveside rites and interment were at the Johnson

Family Cemetery. Lyndon, who "always takes funerals hard," seemed to be having more than his share of them in 1961.²⁰

The Vice President was always interested in the youth of America. On December 28-30 Boy Scout Troop No. 138 of Stonewall had its annual Christmas camp. On Friday, the 29th, they hiked from Stonewall to Eugene Lindig's. En route back, the scouts halted on the banks of the Pedernales, near the LBJ Ranch, to rest. A car drove up, stopped, and out got Lyndon B. Johnson. He introduced himself, State Senator Henry Gonzales, and City Councilman Alfred Pena of San Antonio to the boys. After "a friendly chat" both parties continued on their way. When the scouts returned to their homes on Saturday, they boasted to their parents of their visit with the Nation's Vice President, who was their friend and neighbor.²¹

The Johnsons spent a quiet New Year's Eve at the Ranch. Their dinner guests were: the Wesley Wests, A. W. Moursunds, Jesse Kellams, Gene Chambers, Charles and Ruth McGaha, and Mary Margaret Wiley. On January 2, 1962, Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson returned to Washington to enable the Vice President to be present when the 2d Session of the 87th Congress convened on January 10.²²

Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson were accordingly not at the Ranch on Wednesday afternoon, January 31, when the Stonewall Volunteer Fire Department was called²³ to put out a small fire in the window air conditioner of the master bedroom.

D. The Second Vice Presidential Year

1. The Johnsons Make Major Improvements to the Ranch House

In the late winter and spring of 1962, the Johnsons made major improvements to the dining room and kitchen wing of the Ranch house. These areas were enlarged and redecorated. With these key rooms under construction, the Johnsons limited their visits to their Hill Country home.

Meanwhile, on the Washington scene, they had realized that their official hospitality requirements far exceeded the limits of their 30th Place residence, where they had lived when in the Nation's Capital, for more than a decade. They had accordingly purchased from Perle Mesta her Norman house, The Elms, at 4040 5²⁴d Street, NW, in Spring Valley, a fashionable Washington residential area.

2. The Johnsons and the First Annual Peach Jamboree

The Vice President was at the Ranch for a brief visit on the third weekend in June, between Texas speaking engagements. Mrs. Tom Weinheimer, a neighbor and general chairwoman of the First Annual Stonewall Peach Jamboree, learned of his presence. She drove over to the Ranch and presented him "an official personal invitation" to the Jamboree to be held on Saturday, June 30. She also gave²⁵ him a box of delicious Gillespie County peaches to take back to Washington.

With Congress in session, the Vice President was uncertain whether he would be able to attend the Jamboree, but Mrs. Johnson would be there to crown Miss Peach. A 2-inch downpour all but wiped out the afternoon program, but the sky cleared and a big crowd was on hand for the night's festivities, the high point to be the selection and crowning of Miss Peach.

Kathy Wahl was chosen over 11 other contestants for the honor. There was, however, even a bigger thrill in prospect. Congress having recessed for a long Fourth of July weekend, Lyndon Johnson had left Washington that afternoon. He arrived at the Ranch landing strip and was driven to Stonewall. Mrs. Johnson graciously yielded to her husband, who crowned Kathy Wahl as Miss Peach. Mrs. Johnson then presented Kathy a beautiful bouquet of flowers. Lyndon and Mrs. Johnson were given a standing ovation. After making a brief speech,²⁶ the Vice President, before returning to the Ranch, mingled with the crowd.

3. A Busy Eight Hill Country Days

The next morning was Sunday, July 1, and the Johnsons drove to Fredericksburg, where they attended services at St. Barnabas Episcopal Church. They were accompanied by Lynda Bird, Mary Margaret Valenti, and Liz Carpenter. After an early lunch,²⁷ the Vice President swam and then took a nap.

On Monday, Johnson went horseback riding with Mrs. Johnson and Clarence Knetsch and at noon he drove into Austin. After lunching at KTBC and getting a haircut, he met John Connally, who was currently engaged in a spirited campaign that was to see him win the Democratic nomination for the Texas governorship. Johnson and Connally motored back to the Ranch, arriving at 5:30 P.M. Joined by Mrs. Johnson, Liz Carpenter, Clarence Knetsch, A. W. Moursund, and Dale Malechek, the two politicians drove about the Ranch looking at the cattle. They returned to the house for dinner in the recently enlarged and redecorated diningroom. At 10:30, LBJ told Connally goodbye and went to bed.

On Wednesday, July 4, Vice President and Mrs. Johnson, accompanied by Lynda Bird, Mr. and Mrs. Bob Akers, Mr. and Mrs. Jack Valenti, the Kellams, Liz and Christi Carpenter, Judge and Mrs. A. W. Moursund, Maire Fehmer, Carolyn Kellam, and Bernie Rosenbach, motored into Fredericksburg to attend the final day of the four-day Gillespie County Fair. Attendance records fell, as the "greatest crowd" in the history of the event packed the fair park. Grandstand admissions were closed at an early hour, and by the time of the final race standing room at the rail was at a premium.

The Johnsons and their guests watched all eight races, a baseball game, and other features, while listening to almost continuous band music.

From the fair, the Johnsons and their guests drove to Llano for boating on Lake Granite Shoals and dinner. They returned to the LBJ Ranch by way of the Scharnhorst, stopping several times to admire the deer.²⁸

The Johnsons were in the process of acquiring a tract of frontage property on Lake Granite Shoals, some 30 miles northeast of the LBJ Ranch on the Llano River. In his mid-fifties, LBJ was becoming "enamored of

motorboating and lakeside living." Johnson began his boating craze with an open runabout. He soon found that he needed a craft that would accommodate more people. His staff soon located "a commodious and swift cabin cruiser," which became "the 'flagship' of the LBJ Texas fleet." One of them recalls the day it was delivered by truck and launched into the lake. The manufacturer's representative started detailing for the Vice President the craft's features. Johnson cut him short, "How do you start it and where is the throttle?"²⁹

Four Dallas newspapermen (Ted and Joe Dealy, Dick West, and Jack Kruger) flew south to the Ranch late on the afternoon of the 6th. At 7 o'clock LBJ, Mrs. Johnson, the media people, Liz Carpenter, Doris Powell, Carolyn Kellam, Marie Fehmer, Lynda Bird, and Bernie Rosenbach gathered around the pool for drinks, and then went for a drive about the Ranch. They returned for dinner followed by lively conversation and coffee around the pool.

The next morning, the Johnsons, the Dallas newspaper correspondents, Liz Carpenter, Lynda Bird, and Bernie Rosenbach met at the pool at 9 o'clock. After signing four cement friendship blocks, the media people went for another drive about the Ranch, returning at noon for a late lunch, after which they returned to Dallas.

At 5:30 LBJ started by car for Llano, accompanied by Mrs. Johnson and Carolyn Kellam. At the Sandy cutoff, they were joined by Mr. and Mrs. Kellam and Luci, and at Llano by the Moursunds and Wests. After boating for several hours on Lake Granite Shoals, the party drove to the West ranch for dinner. At 11:30 Vice President and Mrs. Johnson, Luci, and the Kellams returned to the LBJ Ranch.

The next day, July 8, was a Sunday. Johnson awoke at 9 o'clock and at 11 went swimming with Mrs. Johnson and Luci, and visited with the Kellams. The three Johnsons had an early lunch with the Kellams, Marie Fehmer, and Carolyn Kellam, and then motored to Bergstrom Air Force Base. At 1:45 Vice President and Mrs. Johnson, accompanied by Luci, Marie Fehmer, Carolyn Kellam, Liz and Christi Carpenter, Secret Service Agent Rufus Youngblood, and Sgt. Paul Glynn, boarded an Air Force jet for the flight to Washington. By 7:30 the Johnsons were back in The Elms at 4040 52d Street.³⁰

4. The Johnsons Entertain the OAS Ambassadors

In mid-October, Vice President Johnson took off for Puerto Rico to attend the 39-Nation Middle Level Manpower Conference. He was accompanied by Jerry Kivetts and Rufus Youngblood of the Secret Service, George Reedy, Sgt. Paul Glynn, USIA photographer Jack Lartz, and Yolanda Boozer, one of his secretaries.

Ms. Boozer had first worked for LBJ in 1954. At that time her husband, Aubrey, a Civil Service Investigator, had been transferred from Texas to New York City. There, Yolanda secured a position with CBS, as secretary to Bob Jameson. After she had worked there about three months her husband was reassigned to the Civil Service's Washington office.

Whereupon, Jameson telephoned Lyndon B. Johnson in her behalf. She was hired, and assigned to the staff of the Senate Minority Leader.

When Yolanda reported for duty on a Monday morning in April 1954, she was detailed to an office in the old Senate Office Building, which she shared with Booth Mooney, Walter Jenkins, and Mary Margaret Wiley. This was the year of the McCarthy hearings and Ms. Boozer found the environment stimulating and exciting, but her work a bore. It consisted of writing letters thanking people for suggestions, and sending out acceptances and regrets for speaking engagements.

During these months she saw LBJ occasionally, as it was an election year. She was interested by his height and his "gung-ho" spirit. He was "a can do man." In September, she resigned and returned to Texas with her husband to open the first in what has become a chain of restaurants (The Monterrey Houses) specializing in Mexican food.

In 1961, following Johnson's inauguration as Vice President, Yolanda returned to work for him as a member of his secretarial staff.³¹

Johnson now used Ms. Boozer, who is bilingual, as an unofficial translator when he was meeting with Spanish speaking Latin Americans. He wanted her to apprise him of "the nuances that a loyal San Antonio girl" placed on the spoken word. The first time she functioned in this manner was on the Puerto Rican trip.³²

Johnson and his party left San Juan by an Air Force Jetstar at 11:45 A.M., on Thursday, October 11, and landed at Bergstrom at 3:30. There, they were met by Mrs. Johnson, Liz Carpenter, Jesse Kellam, and Woody Woodward. They drove to the LBJ Ranch by way of the Haywood Ranch and Judge Moursund's. There was boating at the Haywood and a late dinner at the Moursund's.

The next morning, after a late breakfast, Vice President and Mrs. Johnson prepared to extend their Texas-style hospitality to Latin American ambassadors and representatives attending a meeting of the Organization of American States in San Antonio. The 28-person group arrived on the Pedernales by bus at 12:45. After being warmly greeted³³ by the Johnsons, they were entertained at a cocktail party on the front lawn.

There was lunch on the lawn, and LBJ presented "Honorary Texan Certificates" to his guests. At 3:30 the Vice President, the group, Ranch Foreman Dale Malechek, and Yolanda Boozer boarded a school bus for a brief tour of the Ranch. Malechek described ranching operations as they motored along, while Yolanda, at LBJ's request, welcomed them to the Hill Country in Spanish. The OAS people left the Ranch at 4:30 for the return trip to San Antonio.

Johnson then took a helicopter tour of the Ranch, accompanied by Chief James J. Rowley of the Secret Service and three of his men.

At 6:15 Johnson, having returned to the house, departed for San Antonio. He was accompanied by Mrs. Johnson, Liz Carpenter, George

Reedy, Yolanda Boozer, and Agent Kivetts. Their choppers put down at the San Antonio Airport at 7:15. From there they were driven to Trinity University, where the Vice President spoke at a banquet honoring the OAS ambassadors and representatives. Johnson and his party helicoptered back to the ranch at midnight.³⁴

The next day was Saturday, and Johnson and Judge Moursund spent the afternoon at a cattle auction, near Johnson City. From there they drove to the Haywood Ranch, where they were joined by Mrs. Johnson, Lynda Bird, Liz Carpenter, Yolanda Boozer, George Reedy, Mr and Mrs. Kellem, Sergeant Glynn, and the Secret Service people. There was boating on Lake Granite Shoals and then an outdoor dinner on the Haywood patio. At 8:45 Mrs. Johnson, Liz Carpenter, Sargeant Glynn, and the agents departed for Bergstrom Air Force Base and a night flight to Washington. Johnson and the others returned to the LBJ Ranch.

5. The Mid-term Campaign and Election

On Sunday, the 14th, the Vice President had breakfast with Lynda Bird, and at 11:30 boarded the LBJ Lodestar for a 1:15 flight to Houston. From there, he proceeded on a commerial airline to Miami, Florida, for campaign appearances in behalf³⁵ of Claude Pepper and other Democratic candidates in the November election.

On October 29 the Cuban missile crisis brought the United States eyeball-to-eyeball with the Soviet Union and an atomic holocaust threatened. After much sabre rattling, a compromise was found. Nikita Khrushchev agreed to dismantle the Cuban missile sites, and President Kennedy promised not to employ United States armed forces to invade Cuba and topple the Fidel Castro regime.

The Nation's voters went to the polls on November 6. Contrary to what usually occurs in mid-term elections, the Democratic party held its own in the House and improved its position in the Senate. Whereas in the House there had been 263 Democrats and 174 Republicans and in the Senate 64 Democrats and 36 Republicans there would be, when the 88th Congress convened, 259 Democratic and 176 Republicans in the former and 67 Democrats and 33 Republicans in the latter. The House for the 88th Congress, having been reapportioned, would again be reduced to 435 members, whereas in the 87th Congress, as a result of the admission of Alaska and Hawaii as the 49th and 50th states, it had numbered 437 representatives.

Undoubtedly, the Kennedy Administration and its party had profited politically from the Cuban crisis.

6. Four Weeks of Mixing Relaxation and Business

Vice President Johnson preceded Mrs. Johnson to Texas for the Christmas holidays, arriving on Saturday evening, December 7. The next morning, after breakfast in the kitchen, he was joined by Judge Moursund for a drive about the Ranch.

A leisurely afternoon was spent at the Haywood and boating on Lake Granite Shoals. His companions on the lake were Judge Moursund, Dr. Lawrence Lamb, Sherman Birdwell, and Bill Deaton. There was some excitement when the battery failed, and a Secret Service boat had to tow LBJ's from the Lake House to the Haywood. There was dinner at the Haywood, followed by a helicopter flight to the Ranch. Before retiring for the night, Johnson, accompanied by Mr. and Mrs. Jake Pickle, Dr. Lamb, Marie Fehmer, and Yolanda Boozer, drove in golf carts down to Cousin Oreale Bailey's for a brief visit.

On the 9th Johnson spent part of the day at the Lewis and Haywood Ranches. There was hunting and boating at the latter. He was back at the LBJ Ranch for dinner with Mr. and Mrs. Kellam, Mr. and Mrs. Jake Pickle and their son, Judge and Mrs. Moursund, Dr. Lamb, Ivan Sinclair, Yolanda Boozer, and Marie Fahmer. After supper there was coffee and lively conversation in the den.

The next morning Johnson joined Judge Moursund at the Lewis Ranch and then returned to his home to be fitted with a hearing aid by Drs. Lamb and Hamilton. After lunch LBJ boarded a helicopter for an afternoon at the Haywood, and boating on Lake Granite Shoals. He had dinner at the Moursunds' before being driven back to the LBJ Ranch.³⁶

At 10:55 A.M., on December 11, Vice President Johnson left the Ranch by chopper for Austin. He did not return until the evening of Friday, the 14th. While away, he was joined by Mrs. Johnson at Fort Worth for a speech before the Chamber of Commerce on the evening of the 11th, an address at Arlington State College on the 12th, and three talks at College Station on the 13th. When they arrived back at the Ranch, the Johnsons were accompanied by Judge and Mrs. Moursund, Mr. and Mrs. Valenti, Dr. Lamb, Yolanda Boozer, and Marie Fahmer.³⁷

The Johnsons had a late Saturday morning breakfast in the kitchen with the Valentis, Dr. Lamb, Yolanda Boozer, and Marie Fahmer. That afternoon the Johnsons drove to the Lake House, and, accompanied by the Kellams, Valentis, and Judge Moursund, spent several hours hunting. After dinner at the Moursunds, they motored to the LBJ Ranch by way of the Scharnhorst, where they paused to watch the deer.

The Vice President and Mrs. Johnson had Sunday breakfast in bed, after which LBJ joined the Kellams and Jack Valenti in the den. The afternoon of the 16th was spent at the Haywood and boating on Lake Granite Shoals. From the Haywood, the Johnsons took a helicopter to Bergstrom Air Force Base, and at 7:25 P.M. boarded an Air Force Jetstar for the flight to Andrews Air Force Base.³⁸

Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson returned to Texas and their Ranch on Wednesday, December 19. They were accompanied by Luci, Susan Taylor, Vicki McCammon, Dolores Hunter, Bella Jenkins, Marie Fahmer, and Mr. and Mrs. Boozer. The days until Christmas Eve were spent ranching, politicking, and hunting. On Thursday, Johnson lunched with Governor-elect Connally, Dolph Brisco, Mr. and Mrs. Henry McPherson and their son, Judge Moursund, and Marie Fahmer. The early afternoon found him driving about

the Ranch with Connally, Brisco, and Moursund, followed by a hunting trip with Mrs. Johnson, Judge and Mrs. Moursund, Mary Margaret Valenti, and Marie Fehmer. On Friday, LBJ's hunting companions were Judge Moursund, Governor Ernest Vandiver of Georgia, Governor-elect Carl E. Sanders of Georgia, Judge Robert Russell, and "J. B." Fuqua. (Fuqua was a Georgia State Senator and Chairman of the Georgia Democratic Party and Judge Russell was a nephew of Senator Russell.) Senator Richard Russell of Georgia joined the group for lunch and dinner. At 10 P.M. they all drove to the airstrip to meet Bobby Baker.

On the 23d the five Georgians departed, and Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson had a quiet lunch with their daughters and the Valentis. That afternoon LBJ hunted with Jack Valenti, Judge Moursund, Melvin Winters, Ernest Stubbs, Jimmy Dellinger, Allen Kellar and a Mr. Ward.

The next day was Christmas Eve and the Vice President went shopping in San Antonio. At 8:30 P.M. the Johnson family assembled in the livingroom to exchange gifts. Also present were the Valentis, Mr. and Mrs. Alvin Sultemeier, Jose Cortez and his children, Cousin Oreale, and Dale and Jewel Malechek and their children. After LBJ had played Santa Claus, the family, the Valentis, and Cousin Oreale sat down to a 10 o'clock dinner.

On Christmas, the Johnsons had more visitors--the Kellams, Mr. and Mrs. A. J. Taylor and their daughters, and Mr. and Mrs. Earl Deathe. During the afternoon, Johnson, accompanied by Jesse Kellam and Tony Taylor, drove about the community delivering gifts to neighbors.³⁹

The Johnsons hosted a dinner for 26 people on the 27th.⁴⁰

On Saturday, the 29th, George Brown arrived at the Ranch about noon, and after lunch LBJ, accompanied by Brown, Jesse Kellam, and the Valentis, employed the helicopter to visit the Scharnhorst and Haywood. They were back at the Ranch for dinner. The next morning, Brown, after touring the Lewis Ranch, said goodbye to the Johnsons and flew back to Houston.

LBJ and Judge Moursund spent the afternoon hunting, and, joined by their wives and the Kellams and Thomases, drove out to Cecil Pressnell's Ranch House for a barbecue dinner.

Vice President and Mrs. Johnson spent most of the last day of 1962 in San Antonio. After attending funeral services for Earl Deathe's father, LBJ reported in at Brooks Air Force Space Medicine Center for a physical examination. The Johnsons were back home for supper with the Moursunds, Kellams, the Elmo Foxes, Lynda Bird, Yolanda Boozer, and Ivan Sinclair.⁴¹ Then they drove over to the Weinheimer ranch for a New Year's Eve party.

The Johnsons had a late New Year's breakfast in the kitchen with Jesse Kellam. At 1:30 P.M. LBJ, accompanied by Foreman Malechek, Jesse Kellam, Jake Pickle, and Jake's son, went rabbit hunting. They ended up at the Moursund ranch at 7 o'clock, where they were joined by Mrs. Johnson, Lynda, Melvin Winters, Ernest Stubbs, Mr. and Mrs. Elmo Fox, Mrs. Kellam, Mrs. Pickle, Jessie Hunter, Yolanda Boozer, and Ivan Sinclair. Dinner was at 9:30, and it was almost 11:00 before Mr. and Mrs. Johnson, accompanied by

Lynda and Yolanda Boozer, thanked their host and hostess and drove back to the Ranch.

On Friday, January 4, the Vice President flew to Oklahoma City to attend the funeral of his close friend Robert S. Kerr, the powerful senior Oklahoma Senator, who had died suddenly on New Year's Day.

The next day, the Johnsons at 3:30 P.M. departed Bergstrom Air Force Base in AF 707 and landed at Andrews Air Force Base at 7:30. They were accompanied on the flight by Luci, Lois Parkhouse, Bobby Baker, Ivan Sinclair, Marie Fehmer, Yolanda Boozer, Gene and Helen Williams, James Davis, Lee Gregg, and Sargeant Glynn.

E. The First Ten Months of 1963

1. Lyndon and Lady Bird Make Several Quick Ranch Trips

On Wednesday, January 9, Vice President Johnson presided over the Senate when the 1st Session of the 88th Congress convened.⁴²

Lyndon Johnson returned to Austin, on January 14, to attend the inauguration of his friend and longtime political associate John Connally as governor of Texas. He, however, did not have an opportunity to visit the Ranch, because he was scheduled to give a speech in Las Vegas, Nevada, on the 16th.⁴³

On Friday, February 1, Vice President and Mrs. Johnson, accompanied by Marie Fahmer, A. W. Moursund, James Davis, and Sim Gideon, boarded an Air Force Jetstar and flew from Washington to the Ranch. They were met at the hanger by Foreman Malechek, Dale Meeks, and Mrs. Moursund. After a Saturday morning's kitchen breakfast with Mrs. Johnson and Marie Fahmer, LBJ and Lady Bird went for the first of several weekend drives about the Ranch. That evening, joined by Lynda and the Kellams, they drove over to the Moursunds for dinner by way of the Sharnhorst, where they stopped several times to watch the deer.

On Sunday morning, Lyndon and Mrs. Johnson met in the office with Ed Clark, Don Thomas, Frank Denius, Jesse Kellam, Jack Valenti, Leonard Marks, and Ben Hern to discuss Capitol Cable Co. Consequently, there was a 3 o'clock lunch. The next morning Lyndon Johnson spent nearly three hours driving about the Ranch with Foreman Malechek. At 5:15 the Johnsons, the Kellams, A. W. Moursund, and Marie Fehmer took an evening drive. They returned at 7:45 for supper, and at 9:25 the Johnsons, Marie Fehmer, and James Davis boarded the twin-engine Bonanza for the flight to Bergstrom, the intermediate stop on their trip back to Washington and The Elms.⁴⁴

Vice President Johnson was back at the Ranch within three weeks. At 8:10 A.M., on February 21, the Johnsons left Andrews Air Force Base for Texas aboard AF 707. After stops for a luncheon meeting in Dallas and an evening speech before the Waco Chamber of Commerce, the Vice President and Mrs. Johnson arrived at the Ranch, at 10:10 P.M., in their Lodestar.⁴⁵

The next morning Vice President and Mrs. Johnson took Maj. Gen. Bernard Schriever and Dr. Edward Welsh for a drive. After a late lunch, LBJ, Mrs. Johnson, the Malecheks, Sergeant Glynn, Walter Jenkins, Marie Fehmer, and Liz Carpenter boarded the Lodestar and took off for San Angelo. After two speeches--one at San Angelo College and the other at the Coliseum--Johnson and his party returned to the Ranch by way of Austin, where the Lodestar picked up Jesse Kellam. Before adjourning to the den for discussions with Jenkins and Kellam, LBJ made a 11:30 P.M. call on Cousin Oreale.

On Saturday, the 23d, Mr. and Mrs. Johnson flew to Witchita Falls, where he made two speeches in behalf of U.S. Representative Graham Purcell. They arrived back at the Ranch at 12:15 A.M. Before retiring, LBJ, accompanied by Lynda Bird, Warrie Smith, Mac Johnson, and Marie Fahmer, drove down to Cousin Oreale's.

The next morning was Sunday. That afternoon, Vice President and Mrs. Johnson took Marian Anderson for a drive around the Ranch. At 7:20 P.M. the Johnsons left their air strip aboard the Bonanza for Bergstrom and then on to Washington.⁴⁶

2. The Johnsons Entertain the Seppalas

Four weeks slipped by before the Johnsons again had an opportunity to return to their beloved Hill Country. On Friday evening, March 22, Vice President Johnson attended the Goddard Memorial Dinner at Washington's Sheraton Park Hotel. From the dinner, he proceeded to Andrews Air Force Base, where at 10:10, he boarded a Jetstar. The plane landed at the Ranch shortly after midnight Texas time. Johnson was accompanied on the flight by the Valentis, Gene and Helen Williams, and Marie Fehmer. As they were to entertain the Finnish Ambassador and his wife, Lady Bird had flown down to Texas earlier.

On Saturday morning, the Johnsons, accompanied by Ambassador Richard Rafael Seppala, the Valentis, and Marie Fahmer, boarded the Bonanza and flew north to the Lake house. A pleasant day was spent boating on Lake Granite Shoals and driving about the Haywood and Nicholson ranches. That evening the Johnsons hosted a dinner honoring Ambassador and Madame Seppala. Some 40 guests were in attendance.

At 9 A.M., on the 24th, the Johnsons and the Seppalas motored across the Pedernales for services at Trinity Lutheran Church. Late that afternoon there was a barbecue in the oak grove. More than 200 were in attendance. Cactus Pryor of KTBC provided the entertainment and the Vice President gave the Seppalas ten-gallon hats. Before retiring for the night, the Johnsons, the Seppalas, Bess Abell, and Stanley and Billie Marcas called on Cousin Oreale.

The next morning, the Seppalas, after an informal breakfast in the kitchen, thanked their host, and, accompanied by Mrs. Johnson, returned to Washington. LBJ then went for a drive with A. W. Moursund, and, upon returning, took a swim in the pool. That evening he drove over to the Moursunds for dinner.

On Tuesday, the 26th, Johnson had breakfast in bed, followed by an invigorating swim. At 10:55 he drove to Johnson City to meet with Judge Moursund. They returned to the Ranch for lunch. After a nap and plunge in the pool, the Vice President, accompanied by Marie Fahmer and Mrs. Malechek, drove over to the Lewis place. That evening he flew into Austin where he made a speech at Huston-Tillotson College. He was back at the Ranch in time to watch a pre-recorded television program from KTCB, "Conversation with the Vice President."⁴⁷

LBJ was up and about at 6 A.M., on the 27th. Driving out into the fields, he watched Dale Malechek and his people positioning irrigation pipe. Accompanied by Jesse Kellam, Lois Parkhouse, and Marie Fahmer, Johnson motored to the Lewis place and then to Three Springs, where they were joined by Judge Moursund. They then drove to the Haywood and spent the afternoon boating on Lake Granite Shoals. Leaving the craft at the Kingsland landing, the Vice President and his party emplaned on the Bonanza and returned to the Ranch.

On March 28 Lyndon Johnson was scheduled to return to Washington. At 6:20 P.M., joined by Mr. and Mrs. Kellam, Cousin Oreale, and Marie Fahmer, he boarded the Bonanza. This was Oreale Bailey's first flight. The light plane put down at Bergstrom, and LBJ and Marie Fahmer transferred to the jetstar for the flight's continuation.⁴⁸

3. The Easter Recess

The Johnsons spent the Easter congressional recess in Texas. On Thursday afternoon, April 4, the Vice President and Mrs. Johnson flew to New York City, where LBJ addressed the Anti-Defamation League Dinner. Taking off from Idlewild Airport at 11:30 P.M., their Air Force Jetstar set down at Bergstrom at 3:05 A.M. They were met by Jesse Kellam and Nita Louise McGhee and drove to KTBC, where they spent the rest of the night.

Lyndon and Lady Bird remained in Austin until noon on Saturday, the 6th, when they boarded the Bonanza for the 25-minute flight to the Ranch.⁴⁹

The next seven days found the Johnsons driving about the LBJ Ranch, visiting the Scharnhorst and the Lewis place, relaxing at the Haywood, boat riding on Lake Granite Shoals, and calling on Cousin Oreale in the evenings. On Sunday evening, they were at the Melvin Winters' for a fish fry, and on Wednesday there was supper at the Moursunds. On Saturday morning, the 13th, Governor Connally, accompanied by Merrill Connally, arrived. LBJ and his visitors were joined by Mrs. Johnson and Mary Margaret Valenti on a flight over to the Kingsland Strip and then to the Haywood. George Brown joined them for lunch and the flight back to and a drive around the Ranch. The Connallys and George Brown left at 3 P.M.

On Sunday, Vice President and Mrs. Johnson and Mary Margaret Valenti motored to Cypress Mill for church services. Mrs. Johnson then returned to Washington, while LBJ spent the afternoon on Lake Granite Shoals. He, along with the Kellams, Buddy Moore, Paul Glynn, Jessie Hunter, and Marie Fahmer, had dinner at the Moursunds. Johnson was back at the Ranch in time for a stroll down to Cousin Oreale's and to be on hand to welcome Congressman Jack Brooks and his wife, when they landed at 12:55 A.M.

The Brookses remained at the Ranch until after lunch on Tuesday. On Wednesday, the 17th, Johnson flew into Austin to get a haircut and to attend George Wiley's funeral. He returned to Washington late on Friday, the 19th.⁵⁰

4. United Nations Day on the Pedernales

Mrs. Johnson, to oversee preparations for United Nations Day on the Pedernales, preceded her husband to Texas. The Vice President, accompanied by Jack Valenti, Mrs. Gladys Tillet, and Marie Fahmer, departed Washington on a jetstar at 2:15 P.M., April 26. They landed at the Ranch at 4 o'clock. Within a hour, LBJ had loaded the Valentis, Marie Smith, and Helen Thomas into a car for a four-hour tour of the Hill Country. Dinner was at 9. Sitting down with the Johnsons were: Bess Abell, Liz Carpenter, Perle Mesta, Lynda Bird⁵¹, the Valentis, Lee Walsh, Helen Thomas, Marie Smith, and Marie Fahmer.

At 10:30 the next morning, buses drove up with 25 UN delegates. After welcoming them, the Johnsons took them on a tour. LBJ conducted some of them on horseback, while Lady Bird took charge of those opting for the comforts of a school bus.

At 12:30 the Johnsons and their guests converged on the oak grove for a barbecue. Here, the "international and interracial group" not only got a taste of Texas hospitality in the food they ate, but in the people with whom they met and mingled. In addition to the delegates, the Johnsons had invited more than 200 guests, representing a "broad spectrum of Texas industry, politics, ranching and professions," including a number of distinguished members of the faculty of the University of Texas. Among those falling in this category were Mesdames Oveta Culp Hobby, Perle Mesta, and Charles Tillet, and Mr. J. Frank Dobie. Mrs. Tillet represented the United States on the United Nations Commission on the Status of Woman.

Following the dinner, the visitors enjoyed Texas-style entertainment that included Mary Tuggle, a bullwhip champion; a firing demonstration by Billy McElroy, a Department of Public Safety sharpshooter; and a hillbilly comedy act by the Grezinslaw brothers.

Speech-making was held to a minimum. Johnson made a few well chosen remarks from a podium of hay bales, reminding his guests that Texas has been a melting pot of people from around the world. He told of the German communities of Fredericksburg, New Braunfels, and Seguin. He described how the "Mexicans, Negroes, Czechs, French, Lebanese," and other ethnic groups had come to Texas to make their homes.

Johnson stressed the importance of people of all nations knowing those of others for a common understanding. He reminded the delegates that, "Our standard of living and per capita income when I was a boy was not a great deal different from the per capita income and standard of living in many of our countries at the present time."

The delegates, like previous honored guests, left a remembrance of their visit in the signatures they inscribed on concrete squares that would

constitute the friendship walk Mrs. Johnson was developing northeast of the house. When they left the area, each delegate carried a "Texas hat" given them by⁵² Lyndon Johnson as a treasured memento of their visit to the LBJ Ranch.

Several hours after the delegates departed for San Antonio and the other guests had left, Vice President and Mrs. Johnson boarded their Bonanza for the 20-minute flight to San Antonio. That evening LBJ was Grand Marshal of the Fiesta Flambeau Parade.

The next day was Sunday, April 28. Accompanied by Marie Fahmer, the Johnsons drove to Fredericksburg for first services at St. Barnabas and then mass at St. Mary's. At mass, a small child sitting in front of the Johnsons cried and made a commotion. When the mother was unable to quiet the baby, LBJ took her in his arms and the infant hushed.

Afternoon saw the Johnsons boating on Lake Granite Shoals. For dinner they sat down at the Ranch with the Kellams, Rodney Moss, Marie Smith, Lois Parkhouse, Ivan Sinclair, Liz Carpenter, Bess Abell, and Mrs. Tilette.

At 8 P.M., on Monday, the Johnsons left Bergstrom en route to Washington. Also aboard⁵³ the Jetstar were Liz Carpenter, James Davis, and Gene and Helen Williams.

5. LBJ Returns to Johnson City for a Commencement Address

Vice President Johnson was back at the Ranch on Tuesday, May 7. Accompanied by Sergeant Glynn and Marie Fehmer, he landed from the Jetstar on the airstrip at 9:40 P.M. Next morning, joined by the Valentis and Judge Moursund, he visited his Ranches. During the afternoon it was boating on Lake Granite Shoals.

On the 9th Johnson spent part of the morning at the Lewis place watching a well being drilled. That afternoon he returned to the lake for boating with Cousin Oreale, Marie Fehmer, and Mrs. Malechek. They were joined for dinner at the Haywood by the Moursunds, Sam and Dorothy Winters, Dale Malechek, and Mrs. Kellam.

The next morning, accompanied by Marie Fehmer and "Beagle, he flew to Los Angeles for a series of meetings and a 8:30 P.M. speech in the UCLA Student Union. He was back at the Ranch at 2 A.M., Saturday. Nevertheless, the seemingly tireless Vice President was out driving about the place by 8 o'clock. That afternoon he took off for Wash⁵⁵ington and a speech before the Association of American Editorial Cartoonists.

Within a week, the Vice President was again off for the great southwest. Accompanied by Mrs. Johnson, Liz Carpenter, Lee Gregg, Marie Fehmer, and Ivan Sinclair, he flew out of National Airport on Saturday evening, May 18, and landed at the Ranch early Sunday morning. Midday found him boating on Lake Granite Shoals with a late lunch⁵⁶ at the Lake House, and then more cruising and supper at the Haywood.

On Monday morning, Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson, Mr. and Mrs. Harry Provence, Lee Gregg, Les and Liz Carpenter, and Marie Fehmer boarded the Gulfstream and took off for Oklahoma, where the Vice President and Mrs. Johnson had a busy time, first in Tulsa and then it was Oklahoma City. Before returning to Washington late that evening,⁵⁷ Johnson addressed a Jefferson-Jackson Day Dinner at the State Fairgrounds.

LBJ spent much of Thursday, the 13th, in New York City at the Waldorf Astoria, where in the evening he attended a party honoring President Kennedy on his 46th birthday. At 3 A.M. Johnson motored to Idlewild Airport to board a Jetstar for a flight to the Ranch. Major James V. Cross, the pilot, was unable to start one of the engines. While LBJ napped aboard the plane, a second Jetstar was flown up from Andrews Air Force Base. Upon its arrival he changed planes and proceeded to Texas, arriving at 7:45 A.M.

Johnson spent the day relaxing at the Ranch until mid-afternoon, when, accompanied by Mrs. Johnson and Marie Fehmer who had preceded him to Texas, he drove over to the Scharnhorst. After an early supper, Johnson started for Johnson City, where he was scheduled to speak at the high school graduation.⁵⁸

The week before the Record-Courier had informed its readers that Lyndon B. Johnson had agreed to address the graduating class of Johnson City High School. When questioned by the press, Johnson said he would use the occasion to inaugurate a nation-wide program "to encourage boys and girls to continue their high school education."

The Vice President was introduced to a record crowd gathered in the fairgrounds grandstand by his former classmate and current superintendent of Johnson City Schools, Mrs. James Leonard. In doing so, Kittie Clyde, as she was known, told of when the Vice President and five others enjoyed their commencement exercises, and of the hope each held for a full life of usefulness. Lyndon Johnson, she added, had certainly achieved his goal. She told of his work in high school, then in college, and how his drive and unceasing work as a young man who "always liked politics," had been rewarded by "being given the second highest official position in our land."

As Lyndon Johnson was presented by Mrs. Leonard, the applause gave proof of the respect and admiration the homefolks had for him and the 25 graduates.

Johnson chose as his text "The World Before Us."

At the close of his address, the Vice President presented to each graduate a photograph of the school as it had looked when he graduated from it 39 years before. On the mat of the picture was a handwritten and signed message from Johnson reading, "Education is the Keystone of the nation."

The students were to ask the teacher he or she knew best to write a short message beside the Vice President's "evaluating the talents, qualities, and capabilities of the student, thereby encouraging⁵⁹ the student to fix goals and continue in school until graduation" from college.

6. The May 27 Storm

On Monday, the 27th, Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson, joined by Mr. and Mrs. Clark, left the Ranch house at 12:30 for a drive through the Hill Country. Mrs. Johnson and Ann Clark were dropped off at the Scharnhorst and the Vice President and Ed Clark were joined by Tony Taylor on the drive back to the Ranch.

At 6:30 P.M. with black clouds building up in the west, the trio, accompanied by Marie Fehmer, sped back to the Scharnhorst to pick up the ladies. Coincident with their arrival at the Scharnhorst, a wild storm bringing hail, rain, and high winds struck. Since they were in a cloth top convertible, they took refuge in the Scharnhorst house. The downpour caused flash floods. Unable to immediately return to the Ranch, they drove over to the Moursunds for supper. From there, LBJ used the telephone to make arrangements for Dale Meeks to meet them at the Boy Scout Bridge, with tractor and trailer. Mesdames Johnson and Clark refused to cross the surging Pedernales on the trailer and spent the night at the Lewis place. It was 12:45 A.M. before the Vice President and the others reached the Ranch house.⁶⁰

There, they learned more details of the late afternoon storm. After passing north of Fredericksburg, it bore southeast into Blanco County, causing an estimated \$500,000 damage. Hardest hit by the storm, the worst since May 1946, were the communities of Loyal Valley, Cherry Spring, Kopp Schod, Stonewall, and Albert. At the LBJ Ranch, trees were stripped and windows broken. Highways and roads had been temporarily closed at many places by⁶¹ flooding, uprooted trees, torn off branches, and down powerlines.

7. The Malecheks' Memorial Day Visit to the Washington Area

On Tuesday afternoon, the 28th, the Vice President headed back to Washington, flying out of Bergstrom at 2:45. He was accompanied by Lynda Bird, Jewel Malechek, Marie Fehmer, Mrs. Charlotte Brooks, Mr. and Mrs. Basil Wilson, and Tony Taylor. Mrs. Malechek would be a guest of the Johnsons of The Elms, and return to Texas with her husband and Ernest Hodges, then en route to the Washington area by truck. Dale and Ernest had left the Ranch with a Tennessee Walker, which they were to drop off in Middle Tennessee to be bred.

Dale and Ernest reached Washington, on the 29th, and parked the truck in front of 4040 52d street.

May 30 was Memorial Day, and Johnson was scheduled to make a speech at the Gettysburg National Cemetery. The flight to Gettysburg was made by Army helicopter. Traveling with him were, Lynda Bird, Mr. and Mrs. Malechek, Ernest Hodges, and a Colonel Jackson. Johnson's speech, before a large crowd, focused on Civil Rights, a question that had convulsed the Nation. This speech struck a responsive cord, when Johnson declared:

Until justice is blind to color, until education is unaware of race, until opportunity is unconcerned with the

color of men's skins, emancipation will be a proclamation but not a fact. To the extent that the proclamation of emancipation is not fulfilled in fact, to that extent we shall have fallen short of assuring freedom to the free.

Upon their 4:00 return to Washington, LBJ took his guests to the White House for a brief tour, then to The Elms for cocktails and closed out the exciting day with dinner at Rosecraft Racetrack.

Before they left Washington, Johnson drove his guests out to President and Mrs. Kennedy's Rattlesnake Mountain estate. When they started back to Stonewall, Jewel rode in the cab of the truck with her husband and Ernest. The drive through the deep south, in a non air conditioned vehicle, Jewel found to be fatiguing and uncomfortable. To make matters worse was the thought of the harassment that might be expected from Alabama and Mississippi segregationists if it were learned that they were driving a truck owned by the Vice President and transporting cattle which had belonged to President Kennedy.

They reached the Ranch not long before LBJ arrived by plane from El Paso. Jewel was very upset, especially when she recalled her truck ride through the south, at LBJ for not⁶² inviting her to accompany him on his flight to New Mexico and on to Texas.

On Wednesday afternoon, June 5, Johnson had flown westward from Washington to Holoman Air Force Base, New Mexico. There, he joined President Kennedy. They spent the afternoon at White Sands touring the base and watching missile shots, after which they helicoptered into El Paso for a conference at the Cortez Hotel.

At 10:45 P.M. Johnson was aboard a Jetstar en route to his beloved Ranch. He remained in the Hill Country until 8:45 on the evening of the 7th, when he returned to the Nation's capital. The brief time in⁶³ Texas was spent driving about the Ranch and boating on Lake Granite Shoals.

8. The Independence Day Recess

On Wednesday, June 26, his mother's birthday, Johnson flew from Andrews Air Force Base to the Ranch. Joining him on this trip to Texas were: Horace and Mary Busby, Leslie and Betsy Busby, Helen Williams, Marie Fehmer, and Vicki McCammon. He spent the last four days of June touring the ranches by both helicopter and car and boating on Lake Granite Shoals. On each of these evenings, he had dinner at the Haywood, returning to the Ranch for the night.

Beagle died on July 1 and was buried in the Family Cemetery. That afternoon after taking an EKG from Dr. Lamb, LBJ, accompanied by Mrs. Johnson, Dr. Lamb, Marie Fehmer, and Vicki McCammon, helicoptered from the Ranch to Bergstrom. Following a business meeting with the staff of KTCB and dinner in the fifth floor apartment, Johnson drove about looking at and pricing trailers for residences for the household help. The Vice President and Mrs. Johnson and the two secretaries returned to the Ranch at midnight in the Bonanza.

On the 2d the Johnsons lunched with Judge Moursund, Albert Weirich, Vicki McCammon, and Marie Fehmer. During the meal LBJ discussed with Weirich plans to air condition the office. The Johnsons and the two secretaries departed the Ranch by chopper at 2:45 for Bergstrom, where they boarded the Jetstar for the flight to Washington. It was Luci's sixteenth birthday, and on their arrival at The Elms, they surprised their daughter with an unexpected present a 1963 Monza convertible.⁶⁴

The Johnsons, after an Independence Day speech in Philadelphia and an evening at the theatre in New York City, boarded the Jetstar for a midnight flight to the Hill Country. The next day was Friday, the 5th, and the Vice President took Postmaster General J. Edward Day and Chuck Roche, who had accompanied him to Texas, on a drive about the Ranch and to the Sharnhorst and Haywood by helicopter. They returned for a late lunch with Mrs. Johnson, Jesse Kellam, Judge Moursund, Will Moursund, Woody Woodward, Marie Fahmer, and Vicki McCammon.

After lunch, Johnson and his guests drove to Fredericksburg to watch the races. They were back at the Ranch by 4 o'clock to enable Postmaster General Day to meet and speak with a number of Texas postmasters. At 6:30 LBJ, Postmaster General Day, Cliff Carter, a Mr. MacMillan, and the two secretaries boarded a helicopter for a flight to the Haywood, boating on Lake Granite Shoals, and a late dinner. It was 10:35 when they returned to the Ranch. Before retiring, Johnson walked down the Pedernales for a visit with Cousin Oreale.⁶⁵

On the 6th Lyndon Johnson said goodbye to the Postmaster General at 10 A.M., and then crowded the Valentis, Jesse Kellam, Rodney Moss, and Marie Fehmer into one of his big Lincoln convertibles for a tour of the Sharnhorst and Lewis place. They were back at the Ranch at 12:30 for a swim and lunch.

At 3:20 the Vice President boarded the Bonanza for a flight to San Antonio, where he attended a Testimonial Dinner for Henry Gonzales at the Gunter Hotel. He was back at the Ranch at 10:35. Joined by the Kellams, he made late evening visits to Cousin Oreale and Lela Martin.⁶⁶

Sunday afternoon and evening found the Vice President at the Haywood and boating on Lake Granite Shoals. Lunch and dinner were eaten at the Haywood. He returned to the Ranch at 11:25 by helicopter, and, before retiring, went for a swim in the pool with Marie Fehmer and Vicki McCammon. At 6:05 A.M., on the 8th, accompanied by the two secretaries, LBJ boarded a helicopter for the hop to Bergstrom, and then on to Washington in the Jetstar.⁶⁷

On Saturday, July 13, at the end of a long day, which saw him departing Washington at 11:05 for Wyoming and speeches in Casper and Cheyenne, the Vice President's plane touched down on the Ranch airstrip a few minutes after midnight, Sunday. After lunching with Mrs. Johnson, Lynda, Luci, the Kellams, Harlan Fentress, Harry Provence, and Marie Fehmer, LBJ traveled to the Haywood for boating on Lake Granite Shoals and dinner. At 8:50 he climbed into a chopper for the flight to Bergstrom, where he boarded a Jetstar and was back in The Elms at 2:50 Monday morning.⁶⁸

His return to Washington was mandated by his desire to see his friend and successor as Tenth District Representative, Homer Thornberry, confirmed by the Senate as U.S. District Judge for the Western District of Texas.

9. An Uncomfortable August Night Aboard the Cabin Cruiser

Early Thursday evening, July 25, LBJ departed Andrews Air Force Base for the Ranch. The Jetstar landed at 8:30. On Friday, after lunch, Johnson traveled to the Haywood by helicopter with intermediate stops at the Lewis place and Nicholson ranch. There was boating on Lake Granite Shoals, dinner at the Haywood, a chopper flight back to the LBJ Ranch, and an evening swim with Marie Fehmer and Vicki McCammon. On Saturday, Johnson discussed with George Nokes plans for building a residence, north of Leaky Tank, for Foreman Malechek and his family. The next morning LBJ drove to Camp Mystic to visit Luci. Sunday afternoon was spent boating on Lake Granite Shoals, with Lynda, the Moursunds, the Kellams, Mr. and Mrs. George Nokes, the Valentis, Boyd Fletcher, Virginia Smith, and Marie Fehmer. On Monday evening, the 29th, the Vice President returned to Washington.⁶⁹

Thursday afternoon, August 1, found LBJ back at the Ranch. That night for the first time he planned to sleep in his cabin cruiser. At 9:15, accompanied by Mrs. Johnson, Paul Glynn, and Marie Fehmer, he helicoptered to the Haywood. After a late supper, they retired to the craft. Johnson and Glynn made up a tumble bed (where the table normally stood) and several bunks. Hardly was the Vice President in bed, before he complained of the heat and asked for air. The only way to get a breeze was to keep under way, so Glynn drove the boat. While changing batteries Secret Service Agent Paul Rundle fell overboard. Glynn pulled him out of the water, soaking wet but unharmed.

About 3:30 A.M., LBJ awoke (Mrs. Johnson and Marie Fahmer had never been asleep) and shouted, "These ants are biting me." Whereupon, the "excursion adjourned to the Haywood House to spend the rest of the night."⁷⁰

10. August Comings and Goings

Lyndon and Mrs. Johnson and Marie Fahmer and Vicki McCammon returned to the ranch on Friday evening, the 2d. On the 3d the Vice President and Lady Bird spent part of the morning in Johnson City, visiting the Boyhood Home and discussing its rehabilitation. They helicoptered into Austin for an early afternoon business meeting at KTBC. LBJ then took a chopper to Llano, where he attended a cattle auction, and then drove to the Haywood by way of the Nicholson. At the Haywood, he rendezvoused with Mrs. Johnson and Governor Connally. After boat riding on the lake, the Johnsons, the Governor, the Valentis, the Moursunds, and Marie Fehmer, had dinner at the Haywood. The Moursunds then said goodbye and the Johnsons and the rest of their guests returned to the Ranch by helicopter.

On Sunday morning Johnson, Connally, and Valenti met at the pool for conversation and swimming. After a while they were joined by Mesdames Johnson and Valenti and the secretaries. That afternoon the Johnsons, Valentis, Kellams, and Marie Fehmer motored over to Camp Mystic. They met

Lynda at the camp and attended vesper services, in which Luci had a part. The Johnsons and their guests then flew from Kerrville to the Kingland strip for boating on the lake and dinner at the Haywood, before flying back to the Ranch.

The next four days, August 58, found LBJ spending three mornings at the Ranch and one in Austin. Late afternoon found him boating on Lake Granite Shoals followed by dinner at the Haywood, and a chopper flight to the Home Place.⁷¹

On Thursday plans to have dinner at the Haywood were aborted by a thunderstorm and the Johnsons ate at the Ranch.

On Friday, the 9th, the Vice President left the Ranch at 9:30 by helicopter for Bergstrom, from where he flew a Jetstar to Los Angeles, the first stop on a busy weekend of California politicing. He arrived back at the Ranch at 4:15 P.M., Sunday, in time to attend the KTBC Family Picnic.

The next morning, August 12, Lyndon and Lady Bird boarded the Jetstar and took off for Houston. Following a speech before the Junior Chamber of Commerce luncheon, a press conference, a stag reception at the Ramada Club, and a speech in Baytown, they traveled the next morning to Knoxville, Tennessee. There, they took a chopper to Madisonville, where they attended funeral services for Estes Kefauver. Accompanied by Marie Fahmer, the Johnsons returned to the Ranch at 10:20 P.M.⁷²

LBJ kept up this hectic pace. On Wednesday morning, with Mrs. Johnson, he flew to Graham for Glynn Stegall's funeral. That afternoon it was boating on the lake and dinner at the Haywood. Although called to Detroit for a speech on Thursday, he was back in the Hill Country and at the Haywood by 4:30. On the 16th he took the chopper into Austin and had Dr. Bailey lance a back cyst.

Saturday, the 17th, saw LBJ, Jesse Kellam, Sergeant Glynn, and Marie Fehmer en route in the Lincoln convertible to Johnson City. Stops were made at the site where the Malecheks' house was under construction and at the Lewis place. At the Johnson City Fairgrounds, they stopped to admire the LBJ Ranch's prize winning bull and heifer. After lunching on hamburgers at Charles' Restaurant, the Vice President and Jesse Kellam attended Mrs. Meta Bergman's funeral. As he was wearing khakis, LBJ borrowed a coat from Melvin Winters and a tie from Jack Valenti.

On Sunday, following a noon drive around the Ranch, Johnson and Jesse Kellam returned to Johnson City to attend Mrs. Mable Ross' funeral. The customary late afternoon routine prevailed--a chopper ride to the Haywood, boating on Lake Granite Shoals, late dinner at the Haywood, and back to the Home Place by helicopter.

Lyndon and Lady Bird Johnson, Luci, Sergeant Glynn, and Marie Fehmer headed for Washington on Monday evening, the 19th.⁷³

11. LBJ Sees His Hereford Herd Win Many Blue Ribbons

Within less than 96 hours, Johnson was en route back to Texas. The Jetstar touched down at Bergstrom at 7:45 P.M., on August 23. Accompanied by the Valentis, the Kellams, and Yolanda Boozer, LBJ transferred to a helicopter for the flight to the Haywood. After a brief boat trip on the lake and supper, it was on to the Ranch.

At 2 P.M. the next day, LBJ, the Valentis, the Kellams, Judge Moursund, Bill Stevens of the Houston Chronicle, and Yolanda Boozer squeezed into one of the Lincolns and headed for Fredericksburg to attend the Gillespie County Fair. This, the Diamond Jubilee Fair, was living up to its "advance billing," and according to officials was expected to be the most successful in three-quarters of a century.

It had opened with a gigantic parade on Friday morning, the 23d. The parade set the tone, and entertainment features drew capacity crowds to the fairgrounds. Exhibits of farm produce and livestock were "surprisingly good despite the drought." The livestock exhibits were the largest to be seen since the years immediately preceding United States entry into World War II. Every stall was occupied. Three new breeds of cattle Santa Gertudis, Charleroi and Red Angus were shown for the first time at the county fair.

The LBJ Ranch had made rapid progress in perfecting its show herd under the direction of Dale Malechek, who had been employed as foreman in January 1962. Making a "clean sweep of the Hereford division," the Johnson herd won both the Grand Champion Hereford bull and the Grand Champion Hereford cow. The Vice President's Herefords also placed first in the following categories: three bulls owned by one exhibitor, best two-year old bull, best senior bull calf, best winter bull calf, best senior female calf, and best sire of sire with four animals shown.

Lyndon Johnson and his party arrived in time to watch the ball game and horse races, and for LBJ to accept the awards won by his herd. An enthusiastic booster of both the July Fourth Race Meeting and the Gillespie County Fair, Johnson told the press that he had attended both these events at least one day since ⁷⁴he purchased his ranch in 1951, except in 1955, the year of his heart attack.

The Johnson party left the fairgrounds at 3:45 and drove to the local airport, where it boarded a helicopter for the flight to the Haywood, with a brief intervening stop at the Nicholson Ranch. After a boat ride on the lake and late dinner, it was back to the Ranch. Before retiring for the night, LBJ opened a birthday present from the Wesley Wests (two electric Sunbeam party snack warmers).

On Sunday afternoon, the 25th, Johnson departed the Ranch in the Jetstar ⁷⁵for Houston from where he continued on to Washington in the morning.

12. The Johnsons Return from Scandanavia

Vice President and Mrs. Johnson left the Nation's capital on September 2 on a 14-day goodwill tour of Scandanavia. On the 19th, two days after their return, LBJ and Lady Bird took off from Andrews Air Force Base. They were accompanied by Lynda, Liz Carpenter, Vicki McCamman, Yolanda Boozer, and Secret Service Agents Ken Gaddis, Stu Knight, and Paul Rundle. The plane put down at the Ranch strip at 7 o'clock. After a drive about the area, they were joined by Jesse Kellam for dinner. Before retiring, the Vice President adjourned to the den for a visit with the Malecheks.

On Thursday morning, the 19th, LBJ motored into Johnson City by way of the Sharnhorst. At Johnson City, he visited the Boyhood Home, then being remodeled into a Community Center by Albert Weirich and his people. He was back at Stonewall for lunch. At 2:45 he drove Mrs. Johnson and Liz Carpenter to the airstrip and told them farewell, as they boarded the Bonanza for a flight to San Antonio, where Lady Bird was to appear on television. LBJ was joined for dinner by the Kellams, Winterses, Valentis, and Yolanda Boozer. Jake Pickle arrived later for conversation in the den. At 10:45 Johnson, Pickle, and Jesse Kellam adjourned to the master bedroom to watch Lady Bird on television.

At 10:30 the next morning, the Johnsons welcomed officials of the Texas Home Demonstration Clubs and officers of the Johnson City, Round Mountain, and Fredericksburg chapters to the Pedernales. The Johnsons gave the 40 ladies a school bus tour of the Ranch, after which Lady Bird had a luncheon with them.⁷⁶

That afternoon the Johnsons, accompanied by the Valentis, Mrs. Kellam, Liz Carpenter, and Yolanda Boozer, drove to the Haywood by way of Johnson City and the Nicholson. Following a short boat ride, they motored to the Winterses for dinner.

On Saturday, the 21st, the Johnsons and Valentis lifted off the Ranch airstrip at 8:30 A.M. in the Bonanza. At Bergstrom, the Johnsons transferred to a Jetstar for the flight to Andrews.⁷⁷

13. Congressman Jack Brooks and the Johnsons Trade Hospitality

Johnson returned to Texas on Wednesday evening, September 27. He was joined on the flight to the Ranch by Congressman Jack Brooks, Homer Thornberry, Sergeant Glynn, Marie Fehmer and Agents Youngblood and Johns. Next morning the Vice President and Brooks and Thornberry drove to Round Mountain to pick up Judge Moursund and on to Lon Parker's cattle sale. They were back at the Ranch for lunch. The afternoon found them in Austin and at Taylor. At the latter they attended a stag appreciation dinner for Homer Thornberry. Johnson, Brooks, Jesse Kellam, and Harry Provence returned to the Pedernales at 10:35 P.M. in the Bonanza.

On the 27th Mrs. Johnson joined the Vice President. LBJ spent several hours filming a program to be presented over KPRC of Houston. At 5 P.M. Johnson, Walter Jenkins, Dick McGuire, Judge Moursund, and Harry Provence boarded the Queenaire for the short hop over to the

Haywood. There, they were joined for dinner by Mesdames Johnson, Moursund and Provence, the Kellams, Lynda Bird, and Marie Fehmer.

At 9:45, on the 28th, the Johnsons took off in the Jetstar for East Texas. After a speech in Beaumont, they traveled to Jasper as guests of the Brookses. They returned to the Ranch on Sunday evening, the 29th.⁷⁸

On Monday morning Johnson visited the site where the Malechek house was rapidly taking shape. After lunch there was a chopper flight to the Haywood with Mrs. Johnson, Congressman Brooks, J. C. Kellam, Ernest Stubbs, Don Thomas, Mary Margaret Valenti, and Marie Fehmer for late afternoon boating and dinner. At 8:40 the Johnsons, the Brookses, and Marie Fehmer climbed into the helicopter for the trip to Bergstrom, where at 9:15 they enplaned on the Jetstar and on to Washington.⁷⁹

14. Business and Politics Dictate Two October Hill Country Visits

On Tuesday, October 15, following a day of politicking in New York City, the Vice President left Idlewild Airport at 11:10 in a Jetstar for Texas. The plane set down on the Ranch strip at 1 A.M. Although the hour was late,⁸⁰ Dale Malechek, Dale Meeks, and Jesse Kellam were waiting at the hanger.

The next day Johnson spent the morning driving about the Ranch or on the telephone finalizing arrangements for purchase of the Queenaire and sale of the Bonanza and Lodestar. The afternoon found him in Austin and the early evening boating on Lake Granite Shoals. He had dinner at the Haywood with Mrs. Johnson, Walter Jenkins, the Moursunds, and the Kellams, and returned to the Ranch at 10:30.

The same routine was observed on Thursday, the 17th. On Friday LBJ drove into Johnson City to check on rehabilitation of the Boyhood Home. He lunched at the Ranch with Mrs. Johnson, Mrs. Kellam, Ernest Stubbs, Marie Fehmer, and Vicki McCamman. Next, he closeted himself in the den with Lawrence Klein, Dale Malechek, and James Davis to discuss certain economies to be implemented in operating the Ranch. Joined by Ernest Stubbs, and Mesdames Johnson and Kellam, he drove north one mile to inspect the Malecheks' house, then in its final construction stage. There was a late afternoon ride on Lake Granite Shoals, followed by dinner at the Haywood with Mrs. Johnson, Lynda, Mr. and Mrs. Woody Woodward, Mr. and Mrs. Earl Deathe, Ernest Stubbs, Mike McCulbough, Walter Jenkins, and Marie Fehmer. The Johnsons returned to the Ranch at 11 P.M. in the Bonanza.

On the morning of the 19th Porferio Salinas and Lois Parkhouse arrived at the Ranch to discuss a painting the former was planning. After a flight into Austin to view the KPRC tape at KTBC, the Vice President returned to the Pedernales for a 3:15 lunch. Some thirty minutes later, the Johnsons, Jack Valenti, Walter Jenkins, Marie Fehmer, and Sergeant Gaddis were aboard the Jetstar, as it roared down the runway en route for Washington.⁸¹

LBJ arrived back in the Hill Country at 10:30 on the evening of October 29. He was accompanied on the flight from Washington by Sergeant Glynn, Secret Service Agents Youngblood and Bendickson and Marie Fehmer. On

Wednesday, the 30th, Johnson was at Johnson City about noon, where he cast an absentee ballot. He then flew to Marlin in the Bonanza to attend former Senator Tom Connally's funeral.⁸²

The Vice President returned to the capital city on Saturday afternoon November 2, and the next morning he was airborne en route to the Benelux countries.⁸³

F. President Kennedy's Assassination

1. Johnson Returns to Texas for the Last Time as Vice President

On Veterans' Day, LBJ traveled with Senators Jennings Randolph and Robert Byrd to Welch, West Virginia, for a parade and speech. From Welch, he continued on to the LBJ Ranch, where the Jetstar landed at 4:55. He was greeted at the hanger by Judge Moursund and the Kellams. Accompanied by Marie Fehmer, they drove off to look at deer and pick up Mrs. Moursund at A. W.'s ranch. They returned to the Pedernales for a 8:40 dinner. Later that evening, LBJ, Jesse Kellam, and Marie Fehmer walked up the Pedernales and stopped for a visit at the Malecheks.

The next day, following a drive about the Ranch with the Valentis, Mrs. Kellam, and Marie Fehmer, the Vice President flew into Austin. When he returned to the Hill Country late that afternoon, the Bonanza put down at A. W. Moursund's Round Mountain strip. From there, he motored to Hadem's Deer Camp. LBJ returned to the Home Place at 10:30 P.M. by way of the Scharnhorst. Johnson spent Wednesday, the 13th, driving about the Hill Country with Jesse Kellam and Judge Moursund.

On the 14th he flew to Los Angeles for a 12:55 speech at the Coconut Grove before a Regional EEO Conference, and a dinner address at the Beverly Hilton. LBJ was back at the Ranch the next day, the Jetstar landing at 1:50 P.M.⁸⁴

His guests on the return flight were Jesse "Big Daddy" Unruh, Lloyd Hand, and Otis Chandler. After lunch and a nap, Johnson went for a drive and deer watching with Otis Chandler. Following a 7:30 dinner at the Moursunds, they returned to the Ranch in time to meet Mrs. Johnson's incoming plane on the airstrip.⁸⁵

At 6:30, Saturday morning, Johnson, Unruh, Hand, Chandler and Judge Moursund left on a deer hunting expedition. They were back at the house for an early lunch. Then, joined by Mesdames Johnson and Moursund, Mary Margaret Valenti, and Marie Fehmer, they boarded the Lodestar for a flight into Austin, where they watched Texas University defeat Texas Christian. Lynda Bird joined them for the football game. The Johnsons and their guests were back at the Ranch at 5:30.

2. The Johnsons Prepare for a Presidential Visit

Sunday morning LBJ again went hunting. He was accompanied by Jesse Unruh, Otis Chandler, Lloyd Hand, and Jack Valenti. They were back at 10:30. Breakfast followed, and soon afterwards the Valentis and the trio of Californians departed. Bill Moyers arrived at 1 o'clock

and the Vice President went for a stroll with Lady Bird, Lynda, and Moyers. At 3:40, joined by the Kellams and Marie Fehmer, they left for a long drive through the Hill Country and dinner at the Moursunds.⁸⁶

On Monday, the 18th, Johnson motored to the Lewis place and Sharnhorst accompanied by Mrs. Malechek. She returned to the Ranch with the Secret Service at 12:30, while LBJ drove into Johnson City for a luncheon with the PEC Board of Directors. That afternoon he hunted deer on the Sandy Cutoff with Marie Fehmer and the Secret Service. The Johnsons, Kellams, and Marie Fehmer were dinner guests of the Moursunds.

The next day was Tuesday. Johnson left the Ranch at 8:45 in the Bonanza for Austin and from there he flew commercial to Dallas. After speaking at Market Hall before the Bottlers Convention, he returned to Austin. He spent the afternoon and evening on the fifth floor at KTBC, closeted much of the time with Governor Connally. It was a few minutes after midnight, when LBJ boarded the Bonanza for the 30-minute flight to the Home Place. He was accompanied by Rufus Youngblood and Marie Fehmer, as he had been throughout most of the day.

On the 20th, Johnson lunched with Liz Carpenter and Marie Fehmer, and then hopped in the Bonanza for the flight to Johnson City, landing at Melvin Winters' strip. He was met by Winters and Judge Moursund. LBJ then drove to the Boyhood Home to meet with Albert Weirich to select the wallpaper that was to be hung. After a stop at Moursund's office, the Vice President returned to the Bonanza and flew onto Austin. After at 5P.M. meeting with Governor Connally at the KTBC apartment, he returned to the Pedernales accompanied by Mrs. Johnson, Marie Fehmer, and Agent Johns. The Johnsons⁸⁷ were joined for dinner by Liz Carpenter, Bess Abell, and Marie Fehmer.

At 11:20 A.M., on November 21, Lyndon B. Johnson, Lady Bird, Liz Carpenter, and Marie Fehmer boarded the Bonanza for the 30-minute flight to San Antonio's International Airport. After lunch at the Dobbs House, they were joined by Governor and Nellie Connally, Attorney General Wagner and Mrs. Carr, and Speaker Byron and Mrs. Tunnell of Tyler, Texas.

At 1:30 Air Force One landed, and Vice President Johnson, Governor Connally, San Antonio Mayor Walter W. McAllister,⁸⁸ and Attorney General Carr welcomed President and Mrs. Kennedy to Texas.

3. Word of the Dallas Tragedy Reaches the Ranch

On the Wednesday, prior to the Dallas tragedy, readers of the Fredericksburg Standard learned that President Kennedy and his wife would be Friday night and Saturday morning guests of the Johnsons at the LBJ Ranch, as the conclusion of their three-day swing through Texas. According to the press release, the Presidential party would helicopter to the Ranch late Friday evening, following a \$100 a plate Democratic fund raising dinner in Austin. They were scheduled to return to Washington the next morning.

This would be the first Presidential visit to the Hill Country, although President Kennedy had been at the Ranch on two previous occasions, the

first time as a senator in the spring of 1960, and then in November of that year, when he was President-elect. On neither of these trips had he been accompanied by Mrs. Kennedy.

The visit to the Ranch would be private, with strict security measures in effect. Newsmen accompanying the Presidential party on its Texas junket would not go to the Ranch.

With their characteristic thoughtfulness the Johnsons had arranged for the early return from Tennessee of their Tennessee Walking Horse, because they knew that Mrs. Kennedy loved to ride. Cactus Pryor had rounded up a number of talented Texans to entertain the first family Billy McElroy, with his marksmanship, a cutting horse demonstration, and a sheep dog act.⁸⁹

On Friday, November 22, the loyal Ranch staff were busy and excited as they prepared for the Presidential visit. Billy McElroy was rehearsing his act to reassure the Secret Service. Dale Malechek had just called the man at Llano, who was slated to put on the dog show. The house help was readying the beds in the green and gay rooms for the President and First Lady. A backboard was positioned between JFK's springs and mattress.

As LBJ had told the Malecheks that he was going to drop by their new house, into which they had moved less than 72 hours before, with the President, they had been up till 2 A.M. hanging drapes. They had started for Stonewall to get their new pickup serviced when Mary Davis flagged them down and told them, "The President's been shot!" The Malecheks parked and joined the household help, Cactus Pryor, Bess Abell, Billy McElroy, and the Secret Service people around the kitchen television. Mary Davis was cooking pecan pies. An "unreal" atmosphere gripped the viewers as they learned first that President Kennedy had been rushed to Parkland Hospital and then that he was dead. Their employer was now President of the United States.

Security, which had been rather lackadaisical, now became⁹⁰ overly strict. Lawrence Klein's wife was stopped and turned back by a guard.

NOTES CHAPTER I

1. Sam Houston Johnson, My Brother Lyndon (New York, 1969), pp. 60-1; Harry Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson (New York, 1965), pp. 37-8.
2. Record-Courier, April 15 & 29, 1937.
3. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 38.
4. Ibid.; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 63.
5. Rebekah Johnson Bobbitt's review of Sally Johnson Ketcham's "Boyhood Home Furnishing Plan," files LBJNHP.
6. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 38-9; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, pp. 61-2.
7. Record-Courier, Sept. 30, 1937. Mr. Johnson had been felled by an earlier heart attack in April 1935.
8. Ibid., Oct. 21, 1937; personal interview, LBJ with Hartzog & Bearss, Sept. 5, 1972. The Johnsons' Austin apartment was at 3119 Tom Green.
9. Personal interview, LBJ with Hartzog & Bearss, Sept. 5, 1972.
10. Record-Courier, Oct. 28, 1937.
11. Ibid. The pall bearers were Senator A. J. Wirtz, W. R. and W. S. Crider, Albert Rose, Charlie Stevenson, J. S. Casparis, Jeff Hobbs, and Amos Felps.
12. Ibid.
13. Rebekah Baines Johnson, A Family Album (New York, 1965), p. 26. Mrs. Johnson's Austin apartment was at.
14. Record-Courier, March 10, 1938.
15. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 40.
16. Record-Courier, July 20, 1938.
17. Ibid.
18. Ibid., July 28, 1938.

19. Ibid. The greater part of the allotment would be used for putting up power lines, while \$15,000 was to be set aside as working capital and \$40,000 to customer extension. Through the REA these funds were made available to cooperatives organized by farmers and ranchers. By management and operation of the cooperative, the members over a long period at low interest rates would be able to receive the benefits of electric power at prices they could afford and still be able to amortize their indebtedness, while paying their interest and operating expenses.
20. Ibid.
21. Ibid, May 5, 1939.
22. Ibid.
23. Ibid.
24. Ibid., Aug. 10, 1939, & Feb. 1, 1940.
25. Ibid., Aug. 10, 1939, & Feb. 1, 1940.
26. Ibid., Feb. 1, 1940.
27. Ibid. Aug. 10, 1939.
28. Ibid., Nov. 16, 1939. Among those entertaining were Reverdy Gliddon and Luke Kent who sang several songs, while accompanied by a guitar; Elmarie Crider who gave a welcome; Corky Cox a declamation; and Miss Medora Crist and Billy Byars of Blanco, who rendered several selections on the accordion and saxophone.
29. Ibid.
30. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 40-1; taped interviews, Mrs. Jimmy Leonard with Bearss & Hubbard, March 13, 1973; Mary Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP.
31. Record-Courier, Nov. 30, 1939.
32. Ibid., Feb. 1, 1940.
33. Ibid.
34. Ibid., Aug. 1, 1940. In the primary, his Blanco County friends gave him 901 complimentary votes, and in the general election, 1,574.
35. Personal interview, Johnson with Hartzog and Bearss, Sept. 5, 1972.
36. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 41-2; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, pp. 62-3.
37. Personal interview, Johnson with Hartzog and Bearss, Sept. 5, 1972.

38. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 43-4.
39. Record-Courier, June, 1941.
40. Ibid., April 17, 1941.
41. Ibid., April 24, 1941; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 71.
42. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 44-5.
43. Record-Courier, May 1, 1941.
44. Ibid.
45. Ibid., May 8, 1941.
46. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 45-6; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon p. 71.
47. Record-Courier, May 15, 1941. Mrs. Leonard was the former Kitty Clyde Ross.
48. Ibid., June 12, 1941. Johnson City ladies in attendance included: Mesdames J. B. Leonard, A. H. Banks, S. Luxton, N. T. Stubbs, O. Y. Fawcett, Tom Johnson, Ohlen Cox, J. Frank Kendall, E. M. Scarborough, Bob McKinney, J. F. Barnwell, and R. T. Gliddon; and Miss Nieulette Hardin.
49. Ibid.
50. Ibid., June 3, 1941.
51. Ibid., June 26, 1941.
52. Thomas to Rebekah Johnson, June 17, 1941, Rebekah Johnson Papers, LBJ Presidential Library. Mike Thomas was president of M. H. Thomas & Co., of Dallas, a cotton merchant and brokerage firm.
53. Annie Baines to Rebekah Johnson, May 22, 1941, Rebekah Johnson Papers, LBJ Presidential Library.
54. Telephone interview, Sam Houston Johnson with Bearss, July 17, 1978; taped interview, Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP.
55. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 46.
56. Ibid., pp. 46-7; Record-Courier, July 3, 1941; personal interview, Sam Houston Johnson with Bearss, Dec. 2, 1972; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 72.

57. Record-Courier, July 3, 1941.
58. Ibid.
59. Ibid., Dec. 11, 1941.
60. Lady Bird Johnson to Mr. & Mrs. Sterling Price, Feb. 27, 1942, Rebekah Johnson Collection, LBJ Presidential Library. The Prices then lived in Austin. Subsequently, Mary Rather, a long time friend but a newcomer to the Johnson staff, shared the apartment with Mrs. Johnson.
61. Record-Courier, March 5, 1942.
62. Ibid., March 29, 1942.
63. Ibid.
64. Ibid., May 7, 1942.
65. Booth Mooney, The Lyndon Johnson Story (New York, 1964), pp. 45-6; Lyndon Johnson's Journal of Mission to Southwest Pacific, May-July 1942, LBJ Presidential Library.
66. William L. White, Queens Die Proudly (New York, 1943), pp. 266-
67. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 48.
68. Record-Courier, May 7, 1942.
69. Ibid., Aug. 6, 1942. In addition to Lyndon B. Johnson dinner guests were: Mrs. Rebekah Johnson, Mrs. Josefa White, Mrs. E. P. Ross, Mrs. Ava Cox and her son Corky, Mr. and Mrs. James Ealy Johnson and son, Mrs. Margaret Kimball and daughter of Cotulla, Claudia Watson of Dallas, Mr. and Mrs. J. B. Leonard and children, Mrs. Mae Williams, and Mrs. R. T. Gliddon. Mrs. Tom Johnson was assisted in preparing the dinner by her daughters, Mrs. Cox and Mrs. Kimball, and Mrs. James Leonard.
70. Ibid., Aug. 29, 1942.
71. Ibid., May 27 & June 3, 1943. Johnson, having been identified with young people and education since he was Texas' first director of NYA, was a popular choice as the commencement speaker. He brought to the campus "a cross section of the social and economic, as well as educational challenges of this age, seasoned with the enthusiasm of youth." In addition, his service with the Navy and on the Naval Affairs Committee gave him an intimate knowledge of the military possessed by few other members of Congress.
72. Ibid., Aug. 19 & 26, 1943. Other speakers besides Johnson were U.S. Representative Carlos Ashley of Llano and Percy T. Brigham of Blanco.
73. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 49.

74. Record-Courier, March 31, 1944.
75. Personal interview, Sam Houston Johnson with Bearss, March 15, 1973.
76. Record-Courier, July 13, 1944.
77. Ibid., July 27, 1944. Johnson lost one of the ten counties, Washington, to his opponent.
78. Ibid., Nov. 9, 1944. See Appendix A for a breakdown of the Johnson-Bartell vote in Blanco County.
79. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 50.
80. Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 72.
81. Record-Courier, April 25, 1946.
82. Ibid., May 23, 1946.
83. Ibid., May 30 & June 6, 1946.
84. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 50.
85. Taped interviews, Dorothy J. Nichols with Frantz, Sept. 24, 1968, & Harvey O. Payne with Paul Bolton, Oct. 15, 1968, files LBJ Library.
86. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 50.
87. Record-Courier, July 11 & 18, 1946.
88. Ibid., July 18, 1946.
89. Ibid., July 25, 1946.
90. Ibid., Aug. 1, 1946.
91. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 50-1.
92. Record-Courier, Aug. 29 & Sept. 5, 1946.
93. Ibid., July 24, 1947.
94. Ibid., Aug. 7, 1947.
95. Ibid., May 20, 1948.

NOTES CHAPTER II

1. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 52-3.
2. Record-Courier, May 13, 1948; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 72.
3. Record-Courier, May 20, 1948.
4. Ibid., May 27, 1948.
5. Ibid., June 10, 1948.
6. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 54.
7. Record-Courier, June 10, 1948; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, pp. 77-3.
8. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 55.
9. Record-Courier, June 17, 1948.
10. Ibid., July 8, 1948; personal interview, Ohlen Cox with Bearss, Jan. 18, 1973. Mr. Cox located the site where the Johnson helicopter landed as about 30 yards northeast of N. T. Stubbs' smokehouse, on the old Johnson City baseball field.
11. Record-Courier, June 3, 1948.
12. Taped interview, Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP. Miss Rather recalled that she and Jim Busby drove about frantically, as they sought to reach the scenes of rallies ahead of the helicopter.
13. Record-Courier, July 29, 1948.
14. Ibid., Aug. 5, 1948.
15. Ibid.
16. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 55.
17. Record-Courier, Aug. 5, 1948.
18. Ibid., Aug. 5 & 12, 1948.
19. Ibid., Aug. 19, 1948. Mrs. Gliddon had been named postmistress on April 1, 1948, and had leased the Record-Courier to W. H. "Bill" Miller

of Marble Falls for one year. At the end of October, Miller, having taken a government job, asked Mrs. Gliddon to relase him from the contract, which she did. Mrs. Gliddon then resumed the editorship in addition to her duties as postmistress. Telephone interview, Gliddon with Bearss, July 19, 1978.

20. Record-Courier, Aug. 26, 1948.
21. Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 45.
22. Ibid., p. 76.
23. Record-Courier, Sept. 2, 1948; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 76.
24. Record-Courier, Sept. 16, 1948; Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 56-7; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 72; telephone interview, S. H. Johnson with Bearss, July 17, 1978.
25. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 57-8.
26. Ibid., p. 58; Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 78.
27. Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 78.
28. Record-Courier, Nov. 4, 1948.
29. Rebekah Baines Johnson, A Family Album (New York, 1965), p. 17.
30. Record-Courier, Nov. 11, 1948.
31. Ibid., Sept. 22, 1949.
32. Johnson, My Brother Lyndon, p. 81; Leslie E. Carpenter, "The Whip from Texas," Colliers, Feb. 17, 1951.
33. Paul F. Healy, "The Frantic Gentleman from Texas," The Saturday Evening Post, May 19, 1951.
34. Carpenter, "The Whip from Texas," Colliers, Feb. 17, 1951.
35. Record-Courier, Jan 4. 1951.
36. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 61.
37. Record-Courier, Feb. 16, 1951; Carpenter, "The Whip from Texas," Colliers, Feb. 17, 1951.
38. Record-Courier, May 31, 1951; Healy, "The Frantic Gentleman from Texas," Saturday Evening Post, May 19, 1951.
39. Record-Courier, Nov. 9, 1951.

40. Fredericksburg Standard, Jan. 9, 1952.
41. Ibid.
42. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 62-3; Richard C. Bain, Convention Decisions and Voting Records (Washington, 1960), pp. 278-92.
43. Taped interview, Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP.
44. Taped interview, Luci Johnson Nugent with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP. Mrs. Nugent's first clear and distinct recollection of the Ranch is associated with the flood.
45. Ibid.; taped interview, Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP.
46. Ibid.
47. Fredericksburg Standard, Sept. 17, 1952; personal interview J. O. Tanner with Bearss, Jan. 26, 1973; taped interview, Hahne with Kelley & Bearss, May 31, 1978, files LBJNHP.

NOTES CHAPTER III

1. Record-Courier, Dec. 26, 1952.
2. Ibid., Jan. 9, 1953.
3. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 63-4.
4. Record-Courier, Jan. 16, 1953.
5. Fredericksburg Standard, Aug. 26, 1953.
6. Ibid., Sept. 2, 1953.
7. Ibid., Dec. 16, 1953.
8. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 64.
9. Fredericksburg Standard, July 21, 1954.
10. Record-Courier, July 30, 1954.
11. Fredericksburg Standard, July 28, 1954.
12. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 64-5.
13. Fredericksburg Standard, Sept. 8, 1954.
14. Ibid.
15. Ibid.
16. Personal interview, Sam Houston Johnson with Bearss, March 15, 1973.
17. Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 20 & Nov. 3, 1954.
18. General Election Returns for Blanco and Gillespie Counties, Nov. 2, 1954, County Clerk's Offices, Blanco and Gillespie County Courthouses.
19. Record-Courier, Nov. 12, 1954; Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 65.
20. Record-Courier, Nov. 12, 1954; Provence Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 64.
21. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 65-6.
22. Record-Courier, Feb. 4, 1955.
23. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 66.
24. Fredericksburg Standard, June 22, 1955.
25. Personal interview, Sam Houston Johnson with Bearss, March 15, 1973; Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 67-8.

26. Fredericksburg Standard, July 3, 1955; Record-Courier, July 8, 1955.
27. Record-Courier, July 8, 1955.
28. Fredericksburg Standard, Sept. 2, 1955; taped interviews, Miss Rather with Michael L. Gillette, Dec. 10, 1974, files LBJ Library & Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP. Mary Rather had resigned from the Johnson staff in 1953, and was living and employed in Hillsboro at the time of the Senator's heart attack. She had immediately called, inquiring what she could do to help. Mrs. Johnson returned the call, and asked Mary to join them at the Ranch on their return to Texas. Learning that the Johnsons were due to arrive about noon on the 26th, she had driven down from Hillsboro.
29. Fredericksburg Standard, Sept. 2, 1955.
30. Taped interviews, Miss Rather with Gillette, Dec. 10, 1974, files LBJ Library, & Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP.
31. Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, pp. 55-6.
32. Taped interview, Liz Carpenter with Kelley & Bearss, June 7, 1978, files LBJNHP.
33. Taped interviews, Miss Rather with Gillette, Dec. 10, 1974, files LBJ Library, Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, LBJNHP.
34. "Swimming Pod area, LBJ Ranch, Stonewall, Texas," by B. D. A., 1955, Mrs. Johnson's Files, LBJ Ranch.
35. Taped interview, Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP.
36. Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 19, 1955.
37. Taped interview, Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP; Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, pp. 56, 59.
38. Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, p. 59.
39. Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 26, 1955.
40. Taped interview, Miss Rather with Kelley & Bearss, June 8, 1978, files LBJNHP.
41. Taped interview, Miss Rather with Gillette, Dec. 10, 1974, files LBJ Library.
42. Fredericksburg Standard, Nov. 23, 1955; taped interview, Liz Carpenter with Kelley & Bearss, June 7, 1978, files LBJNHP.
43. Fredericksburg Standard, Nov. 30, 1955; Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, p. 58.

44. Fredericksburg Standard, Nov. 30, 1955.
45. Taped interview, Mary Rather with Gillette, Dec. 10, 1974, files LBJ Library.
46. Fredericksburg Standard, Dec. 28, 1955.
47. Ibid., Jan. 4, 1956, & Record-Courier, Jan. 13, 1956.
48. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 71.
49. Ibid.
50. Fredericksburg Standard, April 11, 1956.
51. Ibid.
52. Record-Courier, May 11, 1956.
53. Fredericksburg Standard, May 9, 1956; personal interview, Sam Houston Johnson with Bearss, March 15, 1973.
54. Fredericksburg Standard, May 23, 1956.
55. Record-Courier, Aug. 17, 1956.
56. Fredericksburg Standard, Aug. 22, 1956; Record-Courier, Aug. 24, 1956.
57. Record-Courier, Oct. 26, 1956.
58. Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 24, 1956.
59. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 72-3.
60. Fredericksburg Standard, Dec. 26, 1956.
61. Record-Courier, Jan 11, 1957.
62. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 745.
63. Fredericksburg Standard, June 26, 1957; personal interview, Sam Houston Johnson with Bearss, March 5, 1973.
64. Fredericksburg Standard, May 1 & July 3, 1957. Flood waters from the Pedernales had reached the front steps of Junction School, whereas in 1952 water had stood at a depth of 55 inches inside the building. Albert Everett and his wife, who were again living in the school, evacuated the building, never to spend another night there.
65. Ibid., Aug. 21, 1957. Cox, the son of Ohlen and Ava Johnson Cox, was Lyndon Johnson's second cousin, and held degrees from Southwest Texas State Teachers College and Sul Ross.

66. Ibid.
67. Ibid.; Record-Courier, April 23, 1957.
68. Taped interview, Liz Carpenter with Kelley & Bearss, June 7, 1978, files LBJNHP.
69. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 76-7.
70. Record-Courier, Aug. 8, 1958.
71. Ibid.
72. Eisenhower to Johnson, July 16, 1958, Rebekah Johnson Papers, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
73. LBJ to Rebekah Baines Johnson, July 21, 1958, Rebekah Johnson Papers, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
74. Fredericksburg Standard, Sept. 17, 1958. In addition to five of her children, she was survived by her brother Huffman and her sister Mrs. W. E. Saunders of San Antonio. Pallbearers were Mayor Tom Miller of Austin, Sherman Birdwell, Jr., Dr. J. Edward Prewitt, Ben M. Brigham, Ben Crider, Truman Faucett, R. Kay McKinney, and Homer Thornberry. Members of Congress in attendance, besides her son and Representative Thornberry, were Speaker Rayburn, Senator Ralph Yarborough, and Representatives John Young and Bob Poage. Bobby Baker, Secretary to the Majority Leader, was also present.
75. Ibid., Oct. 15, 1958.
76. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 78-77.
77. Pre-Presidential Diary, Aug. 27-30, 1959, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
78. Record-Courier, April 1, 1959.
79. Fredericksburg Standard, June 3, 1959.
80. Pre-Presidential Diary, Sept. 18-Oct. 3, 1959, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. Mary Margaret Wiley was the Ranch Secretary.
81. Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 7, 1959.
82. Ibid.; Pre-Presidential Diary, Oct. 3-4, 1959, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
83. Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 14, 1959; Pre-Presidential Diary, Oct. 6-13, 1959, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
84. Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 14 & 21, 1959; Pre-Presidential Diary, Oct. 13-19, 1959, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. Senator and Mrs. Johnson traveled to Austin later in the day to have lunch at the Governor's Mansion

with President Mateos. They then went to Bergstrom to see the Mexicans take off for Mexico City.

85. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 81.
86. Fredericksburg Standard, Nov. 4, 1959.
87. Pre-Presidential Diary, Oct. 19-31, 1959, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
88. Ibid., Oct. 28, 1959; Fredericksburg Standard, Nov. 11, 1959.
89. Record-Courier, Jan. 1, 1960.
90. Pre-Presidential Diary, Jan. 1-3, 1960, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
91. Pre-Presidential Diary, April 9-21, 1960, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. Members of the executive committee in attendance were: John Crooker, Jr., Dub Singleton, Sam Low, J. Edwin Smith, Warren Cunningham, Kendall Baker, Jack Valenti, Buster Keeton, and Stanley Woods.
92. Ibid., April 22-25, 1960.
93. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 84.
94. Record-Courier, April 29 & May 6, 1960.
95. Fredericksburg Standard, May 11, 1960.
96. Ibid., May 18, 1960.
97. Record-Courier, May 27, 1960; Pre-Presidential Diary, May 20, 1960, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
98. Fredericksburg Standard, June 15, 1960. The barbecue was catered by Brick's Barbecue Lunchroom.
99. Ibid.; Pre-Presidential Diary, June 14, 1960, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
100. Fredericksburg Standard, July 6, 1960.
101. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 86-9.
102. Fredericksburg Standard, July 20, 1960; Pre-Presidential Diary, July 16, 1960, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. In addition to the Johnson family those aboard the Convair included: Betty Cason, George Reedy, Horace Busby, Mary Margaret Wiley, Mrs. Ashton Gonella, Diana Tschursin, Bill Lloyd, Mary Rather, Bill Moyers, and Geraldine Williams.
103. Fredericksburg Standard, July 27, 1960; Pre-Presidential Diary, July 20, 1960, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. Accompanying Senator and Mrs. Johnson to Mexico were: Dr. Charles W. and Mrs. Bailey, Homer and Ebise Thornberry, Diana Tschursin, Mary Margaret Wiley, Mrs. Ashton Gonella, and George Reedy.

104. Fredericksburg Standard, Aug. 3, 1960. On the 25th Johnson made a two-day swing through Colorado and Wyoming.
105. Pre-Presidential Diary, July 26-29, 1960, Lyndon B. Johnson Library; Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 89.
106. Record-Courier, July 29, 1960.
107. Ibid., Aug. 12, 1960; Fredericksburg Standard, Aug. 10, 1960.
108. Pre-Presidential Diary, Aug. 5, 1960, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
109. Fredericksburg Standard, Aug. 10, 1960.
110. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 90-1.
111. Fredericksburg Standard, Sept. 14, 1960; Record-Courier, Sept. 16, 1960.
112. Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 12, 1960.
113. Record-Courier, Oct. 21, 1960.
114. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 912.
115. Fredericksburg Standard, Nov. 9, 1960: Gillespie and Blanco County Election Returns for General Election, Nov. 8, 1960, County Clerk's Offices, Gillespie and Blanco County Courthouses.
116. Record-Courier, Nov. 11, 1960.
117. Fredericksburg Standard, Nov. 23, 1960; Pre-Presidential Diary, Nov. 16-17, 1960, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. Among those having dinner with President-elect Kennedy besides his host and hostesses were: Kenneth O'Donnell, Joe Gargan, Congressman Tolbert Macdonald of Massachusetts, Bobby Baker, Beth Fein, Dorothy Nichols, Bill Moyers, Bob Waldron, and Mary Margaret Wiley.

NOTES CHAPTER IV

1. Record-Courier, Jan. 20, 1961; Fredericksburg Standard, Jan. 18, 1961.
2. Record-Courier, Feb. 7, 1961.
3. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 95.
4. Fredericksburg Standard, Feb. 15 & 22, 1961. Teague, 39, was a resident of Austin and Williams, 37, lived in Houston.
5. Record-Courier, April 7, 1961; Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 97.
6. Fredericksburg Standard, April 19, 1961; Record-Courier, April 21, 1961; taped interview, Cactus Pryor with Paul Bolton, Sept. 10, 1968, files Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
7. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 98-9.
8. Fredericksburg Standard, July 5, 1961.
9. Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, pp. 142-43; Fredericksburg Standard, July 19, 1961; Record-Courier, July 14 & 21, 1961; taped interview Pryor with Bolton, Sept. 10, 1968, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. President Khan was accompanied by his daughter Begum Aurangzeb and her husband and the Pakistani Ambassador to the United States and his wife.
10. Taped interview, Liz Carpenter with Kelley and Bearss, June 7, 1978, files LBJNHP; Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, p. 159.
11. Fredericksburg Standard, July 19, 1961.
12. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 100; Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 18, 1961.
13. Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, p. 124.
14. Ibid.; Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 101.
15. Fredericksburg Standard, Oct. 18, 1961; Record-Courier, Oct. 20, 1961; Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, pp. 125-26.
16. Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, 126-27.
17. Ibid., pp. 130-31.
18. Pre-Presidential Diary, Dec. 5-15, 1961, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
19. Ibid., Dec. 16, 1961; Fredericksburg Standard, Dec. 20, 1961.
20. Fredericksburg Standard, Dec. 27, 1961; Pre-Presidential Diary, Dec. 19-26, 1961, Lyndon B. Johnson Library; Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, p. 131.

The Mosses had made their home in Fredericksburg for a number of years, except for a few weeks' brief residence in San Antonio during 1961. Mrs. Moss was survived by her husband, a social security representative of the Texas Department of Public Welfare, a 13-year-old son, Rodney, and two brothers and two sisters. Having dinner and spending the night in the Ranch house on the 25th were: Mr. and Mrs. Johnson, Lynda and Lucy, Jim Moss and Rodney, Mr. and Mrs. Alexander and Becky, Sam Houston Johnson, Mr. and Mrs. Bobbitt and Philip, and Mary Margaret Wiley.

21. Fredericksburg Standard, Jan. 3, 1962; Pre-Presidential Diary, Dec. 26-30, 1961, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. Henry Gonzales had arrived at the Ranch on the 28th to go hunting at A. W. Moursund's and the Sharnhorst with the Vice President.

22. Pre-Presidential Diary, Dec. 28-31, 1961, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.

23. Fredericksburg Standard, Feb. 7, 1963; taped interview, D. Malechek, with Kelley and Bearss, June 1, 1978, files LBJNHP.

24. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 95.

25. Fredericksburg Standard, June 20, 1962.

26. Ibid., July 4, 1962.

27. Pre-Presidential Diary, July 1, 1962, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. LBJ was joined at lunch and in the pool by Mrs. Johnson, Lynda Bird, Liz and Christi Carpenter, Mr. and Mrs. Jack Valenti, and three Kellams. Mary Margaret Wiley, LBJ's longtime principal secretary, had recently married Jack Valenti of Houston.

28. Ibid., July 14, 1962; Fredericksburg Standard, July 11, 1962. Mr. and Mrs. Akers returned to their home in Beaumont and Jack Valenti to Houston on the party's 10:30 P.M. arrival at the Ranch. A midshipman at the U.S. Naval Academy, Rosenbach was courting Lynda.

29. Provence, Lyndon B. Johnson, p. 147.

30. Pre-Presidential Diary, July 5-8, 1962, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. Sergeant Glynn was Lyndon Johnson's valet.

31. Taped interview, Ms. Boozer with Kelley & Bearss, June 7, 1978, files LBJNHP.

32. Ibid.

33. Pre-Presidential Diary, Oct. 11 & 12, 1962, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. The group included: Amb. De Lesseps S. Morrison, U.S.; Amb. Rodolfo A. Weidmann, Argentina; Dr. Mario Salinas Zalles, Counselor Bolivian Embassy; Amb. Roberto Campos, Brazil; Amb. Gonzalo J. Facio, Costa Rica; Amb. Arturo Calventi, alternate rep Dominican Republic; Amb. Francisco R. Lima, El Salvador, also VPres. El Salvador; Dr. Armando Interiano, Minister Counselor and alternate rep OAS, El Salvador;

Amb. Carlos Alejos, Guatemala; Dr. Roberto Bueso-Arias, Minister Counselor and alt rep. OAS, Honduras; Amb. Antonio Carillo-Flores, Mexico; Dr. Julio Cesar Alegria, Minister Counselor and alt rep. OAS, Nicaragua; Amb. Juan Plate, Paraguay; Mr. Arturo Garcia, Minister Counselor, Peru; Dr. E. Milio N. Oribe, interim rep., Uruguay; Dr. William Sanders, Asst Secy Gen'l OAS (US); Mr. James E. Bowers, Special Assistant Chief of Protocol office, Dept. of State; Mr. Tobias Hartwick, Officer in charge OAS council activities, Dept. of State; Mr. Winston Lill, Special Ass't to Amb. Morrison; Miss Pat Mahony, Sec'y to Amb. Morrison; Miss Barbara Hughes, Sec'y to Amb. Morrison; Mr. Charles Keely, Latin-American Editor, Copley News Service; Mr. Craig Raupe, ICA, Mr. Hugh Raupe, brother; Dr. James W. Laurie, Pres. Trinity Univ.; Dean Leonard Duce, Dean graduate school Trinity University; Mrs. Lois Parkhouse, Public Relations, Trinity University. Also joined by S. Serv. Chief Rowley, Stu Knight, Rufus Youngblood, Jerry Kivetts who are presented to the group.

34. Ibid., Oct. 12, 1962; taped interview, Ms. Boozer with Kelley & Bears, June 7, 1978, files LBJNHP.

35. Pre-Presidential Diary, Oct. 13-14, 1962, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.

36. Ibid., Dec. 7-10, 1962, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. In addition to Johnson, the Moursunds' dinner guests were: Mr. & Mrs. Kellam, Mr. & Mrs. Don Thomas, Mr. & Mrs. Earle Deathe, Bill Fowler, Kathy Teague, Yolanda Boozer, and Marie Fahmer.

37. Ibid., Dec. 11-14, 1962.

38. Ibid., Dec. 15 & 16, 1962. The Johnsons were accompanied on the flight to the Nation's capital by Yolanda Boozer, Marie Fahmer, Sergeant Glynn, and Secret Service Agents Youngblood, Kivetts, and Rundell.

39. Ibid., Dec. 19-26, 1962. The presents for Lela Martin, Mr. and Mrs. Ernest Hodges, and Mr. and Mrs. Harvey Jordan were delivered on the 26th.

40. Ibid., Dec. 27, 1962. Those in attendance were: Mr. & Mrs. Frank Erwin, Mr. & Mrs. Lloyd Bensten, Mr. & Mrs. Henry Lindsley, Mr & Mrs. Ed Harte, Mr. & Mrs. Alfred Negley, Mr. & Mrs. Lloyd Hand, Mr. & Mrs. Jack Valenti, Mr. & Mrs. Frank Denius, Mr. & Mrs. Wales Madden, Mr. & Mrs. Bill Noll, Mr. & Mrs. Warren Woodward, Mr. & Mrs. A. J. Taylor, Mrs. T. J. Taylor and Susan.

41. Ibid., Dec, 27-31, 1962. Accompanying the Johnsons to the Weinheimers were the Moursunds, Kellams, Foxes, and Lynda Bird. Ivan Sinclair was a Vice Presidential aide.

42. Ibid., Jan. 17, 1963.

43. Ibid., Jan 14-16, 1963.

44. Ibid., Feb. 1-4, 1963.
45. They were accompanied to the Ranch by Chief of Air Force Systems Command Maj. Gen. Bernard Schriever, Walter Jenkins, Dr. Edward Welch, Liz Carpenter, and Marie Fehmer.
46. Ibid., Feb. 21-24, 1963.
47. Ibid., March 22-26, 1963. The tape for this program had been filmed earlier in the day.
48. Ibid., March 27-28, 1963. Also joining them aboard the Jetstar were: Paul Glynn, Gene and Helen Williams, and James Davis.
49. Ibid., April 4-6, 1963. On the 6th, the proud parents attended a Convocation in Hogg Auditorium to watch as Lynda was honored as a member of Alpha Lambda Delta.
50. Ibid., April 7-19, 1963.
51. Ibid., April 26, 1963.
52. Taped interview, Pryor with Bolton, Sept. 10, 1968, Lyndon B. Johnson Library; Fredericksburg Standard, May 1, 1963. UN delegates present were: Mr. Fernando Volio Jimenez, Costa Rica; Mr. Carlos Does Santos Veras, Brazil; Senora Alfonso Venegas, Columbia; Mr. Aureliana Aguirre, Uruguay; Mr. S. J. G. Cambridge, United Kingdom; Mr. Campbell Moodie, Canada; Mr. Torbjorn Christinasen, Norway; Mr. Orjan Berner, Sweden; Mr. Vasile Tilinca, Romania; Dr. Carlos Gonzalez Calvo, Guatemala; Mr. Karoly Csatorday, Hungary; Mr. Christo Kolev, Bulgaria; Mr. Emmanuel Ndawula, Uganda; Mr. Matthys I. Botha, South Africa; Mr. Hassan Nur Elmi, Somalia; Mr. Marof Achkar, Guinea; Mr. Wataru Hiraizumi, Japan; Mr. Khalil Makkawi, Lebanon; Professor Gunapala Piyasena Malalasekera, Ceylon; Mr. Mohammed Nassim Kochman, Mauritania; Mr. Nurettin Karakoylu, Turkey; Mr. A. J. Jacovides, Cyprus; Mr. Salah El Dine Tarazi, Syrian Arab Republic; Mr. Alai Eldin Kharait, United Arab Republic Mission; Mr. Ram C. Malhotra, Nepal.
53. Pre-Presidential Diary, April 28-29, 1963.
54. Ibid., May 7, 1963. With LBJ on the lake were Don and Jane Thomas, Ann and Roy Butler, Woody and Mary Ellen Woodward, Judge and Mariellen Moursund, Frank and Chamaine Denius, Marie Fehmer, and Lois Parkhouse.
55. Ibid., May 8-11, 1963. While in Los Angeles, Johnson purchased bathing suits for Mrs. Johnson and his daughters.
56. Ibid., May 18-19, 1963. Joining Johnson for lunch were the Valentis, Melvin and Nita Winters, Judge Moursund, Jesse Kellam, Normand C. Fischer and son Terrell, and Marie Fehmer. His dinner guests were the Kellams, the Moursunds, the Winters, the Valentis, Harry and Mrs. Provence, and Marie Fehmer.

57. Ibid., May 20, 1963.
58. Ibid., May 23-24, 1963.
59. Record-Courier, May 17 & 31, 1963. Mr. and Mrs. Johnson were accompanied to Johnson City by the Kellams, the Valentis, Lynda Bird, and Marie Fehmer.
60. Pre-Presidential Diary, May 25-27, 1963, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
61. Fredericksburg Standard, May 29, 1963.
62. Taped interview, Jewel Malechek with Kelley and Bearss, June 9, 1978, files LBJNHP; Pre-Presidential Diary, May 28-31, 1963, Lyndon B. Johnson Library; Provenance, Lyndon B. Johnson, pp. 96-7.
63. Pre-Presidential Diary, June 5-7, 1963, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
64. Ibid., June 26-July 2, 1963. The office air conditioning system was purchased from Resse Harrison of San Antonio.
65. Ibid., July 4-5, 1963. Workmen were installing a swimming pool at the Scharnhorst.
66. LBJ was accompanied to San Antonio by the Valentis, Vicki McCammon, and Marie Fehmer.
67. Ibid., July 6-8, 1963.
68. Ibid., July 13-14, 1963. Accompanying LBJ on the flight were: the Valentis, Tom Bendorf, Paul Glynn, and Marie Fehmer.
69. Ibid., July 25-29, 1963.
70. Ibid., Aug. 1, 1963.
71. Ibid., Aug. 2-8, 1963. The Johnsons' dinner guest on Monday was Jake Pickle; on Tuesday, Howard Rose and Frank Erwin; and on Wednesday, Jesse Kellam, Margery Jenkins, Mrs. Whitehall, and Lyle Whitehall.
72. Ibid., Aug. 9-13, 1963.
73. Ibid., Aug. 14-19, 1963. Johnson had spent the early afternoon driving about the Ranch with Mrs. Malechek, after which he, accompanied by Mrs. Johnson, the Kellams, and Marie Fehmer, had helicoptered to the Haywood for boating and dinner.
74. Ibid., Aug. 23-25, 1963; Fredericksburg Standard, Aug. 26, 1963.
75. Pre-Presidential Diary, Aug. 25-26, 1963, Lyndon B. Johnson Library. He was joined aboard the plane by the Valentis, Yolanda Boozer, and four Secret Service agents: Sgt. Ken Gaddis, Lem Johns, Dale Keaner, and Don Bendickson.

76. Ibid., Sept. 1-20, 1963; Record-Courier, Sept. 27, 1963. Present from the Johnson City Club were: Mesdames Velma Halm, Carl Weirich, and Zeke Felps and from the Round Mountain Club: Mesdames E. Bergman, Jack Ebeling, Bill Stribling, and A. W. Moursund.
77. Pre-Presidential Diary, Sept. 20-21, 1963, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.
78. Ibid., Sept. 27-29, 1963. On the flight to Beaumont, they were accompanied by Congressman Brooks, Sergeant Glynn, Marie Fehmer, and agents Johns and Youngblood. On the return, they were joined by Congressman Brooks and Marie Fehmer.
79. Ibid., Sept. 29-30, 1963.
80. Ibid., Oct. 15, 1963. Traveling with LBJ on the flight were: Walter Jenkins, Delores Stacks, Ken Gaddis, and Marie Fehmer.
81. Ibid., Oct. 16-19, 1963.
82. Ibid., Oct. 29-31, 1963.
83. Ibid., Nov. 12, 1963. On Saturday morning, he had perfected arrangements for sale of the Bonanza to Al Cross, Maj. James Cross' brother.
84. Ibid., Nov. 11-15, 1963. On the flight to the Pacific coast, he was accompanied by Jack Valenti, Ken Gaddis, Marie Fehmer, and Secret Service Agents Rundle and Weaver.
85. Ibid., Nov. 15, 1963. Jesse Unruh, Lloyd Hand, and Jack Valenti had left for Austin after lunch.
86. Ibid., Nov. 16-17, 1963.
87. Ibid., Nov. 18-20, 1963.
88. Ibid., Nov. 21, 1963.
89. Fredericksburg Standard, Nov. 20, 1963.
90. Montgomery, Mrs. LBJ, pp. 162-3; taped interviews, Pryor with Bolton, Sept. 10, 1963 and Eugene & Helen Williams with Gillette, Oct. 27, 1974, Lyndon B. Johnson Library.

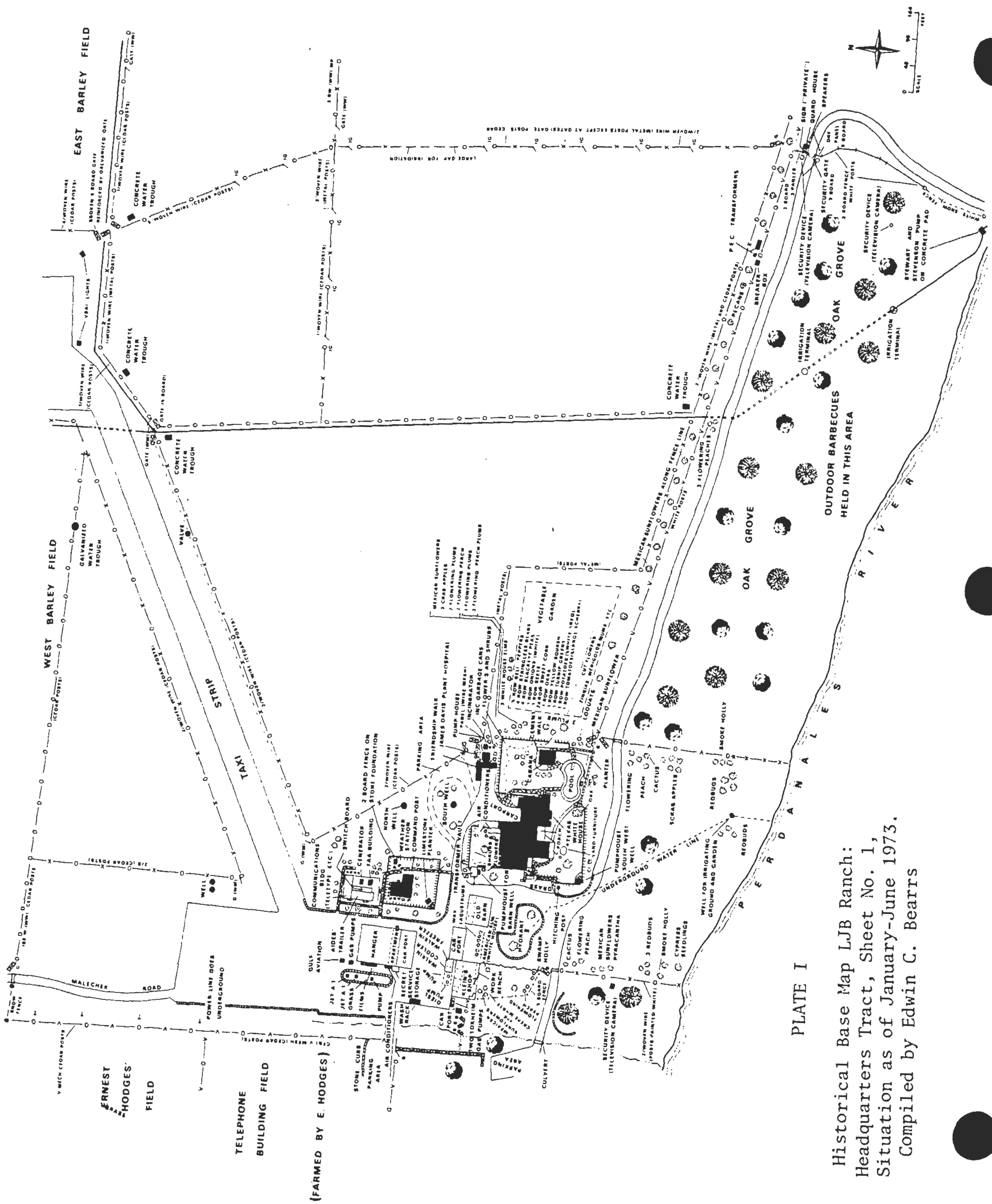


PLATE I

Historical Base Map LJB Ranch:
 Headquarters Tract, Sheet No. 1,
 Situation as of January-June 1973.
 Compiled by Edwin C. Bearris



PLATE II

President Franklin D. Roosevelt
Governor James V. Allred of Texas and
LBJ aboard the presidential yacht Potomac
at Galveston, May 11, 1937.
Courtesy LBJ Library, 37-5-2C.

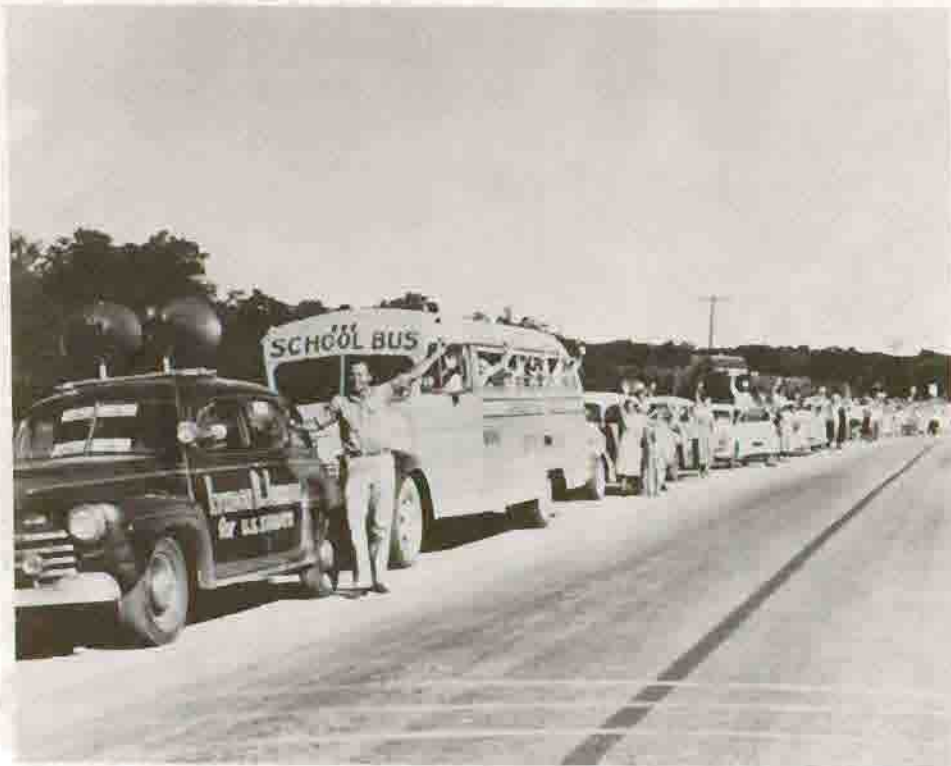


PLATE III

May 3, 1941, Kick-off of Senate Campaign
Blanco County motor caravan.
Courtesy LBJ Library
48-8-15C.

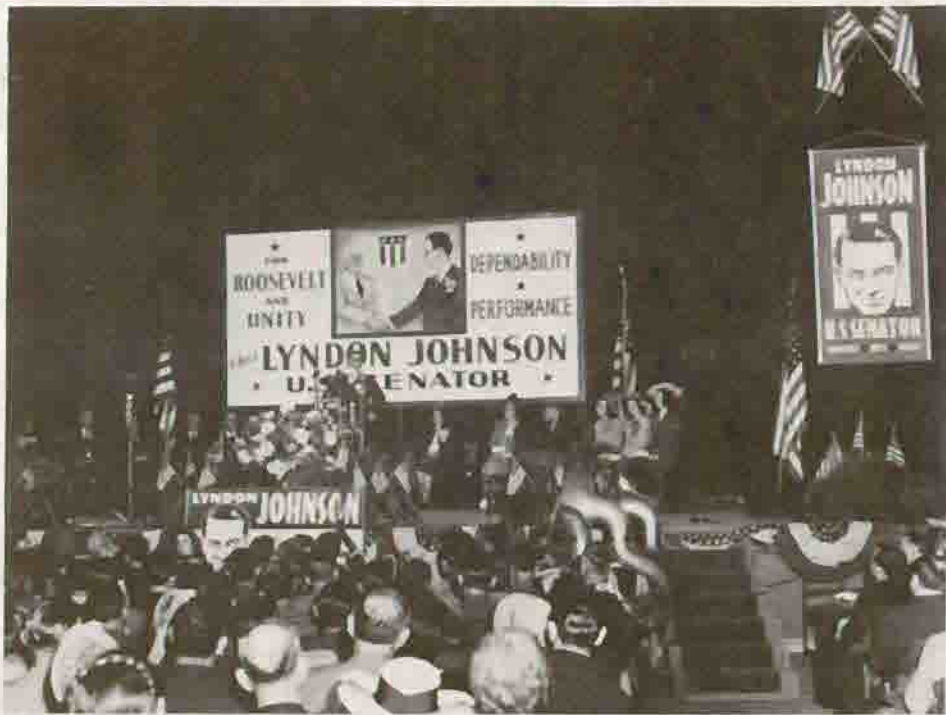


PLATE IV

May 3, 1941, LBJ's Kick-off speech in the Southwest Texas State College Auditorium at San Marcos. Note that Governor Alfred has been excised from campaign poster. Courtesy LBJ Library 41-5-13.



PLATE V

Lt. Comdr. Lyndon B. Johnson in the Southwest Pacific combat zone, June 9, 1942, at Port Moresby, New Guinea, Seven-Mile Airborne. This was the day of the Lae raid. Courtesy LBJ Library, folder.



PLATE VI

The 1948 Senate Campaign LBJ and
the Johnson City Windmill. On July 3
LBJ campaigned in Johnson City
the Johnson City Windmill landing
in Ohlen Cox's pasture. Courtesy
LBJ Library, 1481, 6/7 18C.



Front gate at LBJ ranch.

Lady Bird, Laddie, Lucy, Lynda, LBJ.
Christmas, 1952.

PLATE VII

December 1952, the Johnson family's
first Christmas at the Ranch.

"Front Gate at LBJ Ranch."

Lady Bird, Laddie, Luci, Lynda, LBJ.
Christmas, 1952. Courtesy LBJ Library
Family album.



PLATE VIII

Christmas at the Ranch 1952. Lady Bird, Luci, Lynda and LBJ decorating the tree. Courtesy LBJ Library B-5362-9.



PLATE IX

August 26, 1953, Senator Lyndon B. Johnson
at the joint-meeting of the Fredericksburg
Rotary and Lions Clubs, at the Nimitz Hotel.
Courtesy LBJ Library, AK-79H-9.



PLATE X

November 1954. "The Judge"
(A.W. Moursund) and Lyndon
"anticipation getting their limit--
come deer season." Courtesy LBJ Library
54-119.



PLATE XI

August 27, 1955. Recuperating at the Ranch
from his July 2, 1955, heart attack. With LBJ
in the livingroom are Luci, his mother, and
Lady Bird. Courtesy LBJ Library,
55-8-34-AK.



PLATE XII

September 28, 1955. Governor Adlai Stevenson
and Speaker Sam Rayburn confer with the
Majority Leader. Courtesy LBJ Library,
55-9-19-AK.



PLATE XIII

October 15, 1955. Arthur Godfrey's party
(Frank Russell, William S. White, and
Charles Griffin) poolside visit with LBJ,
Courtesy LBJ Library, 55-10-10 AK.



PLATE XIV

October 16, 1955, Arthur Godfrey
gives Luci a goodbye hug at Gillespie
County airport. Courtesy LBJ Library
55-10-9-AK.

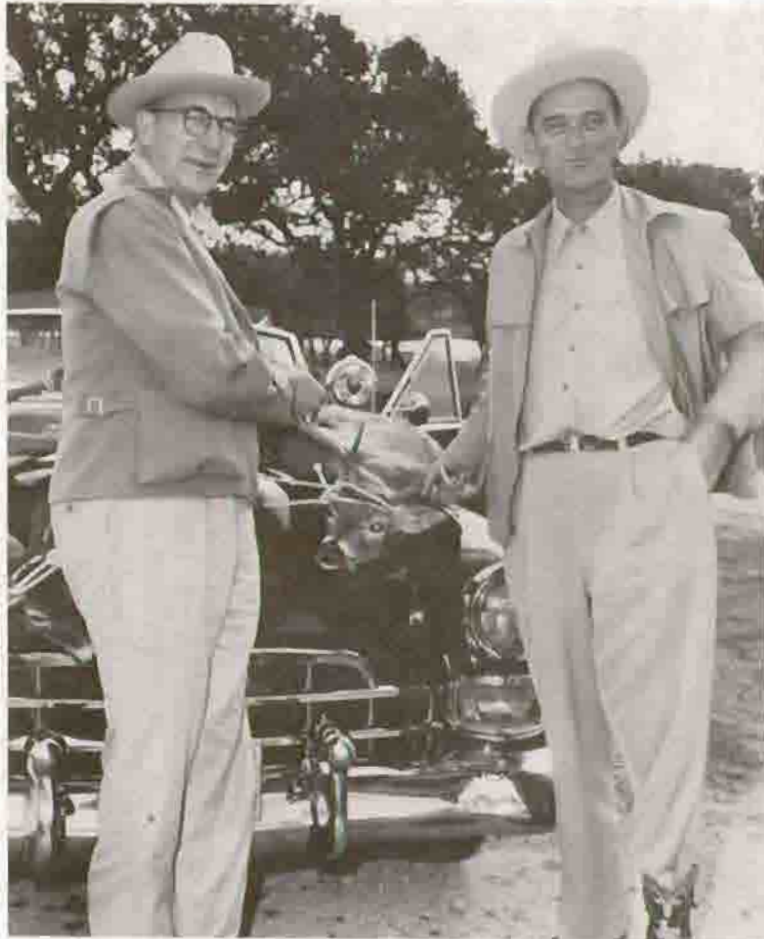


PLATE XV

November 22, 1955. Senator Estes
Kefauver of Tennessee and LBJ
return from deer hunt with Estes buck.
Courtesy LBJ Library, 55-11-72.



PLATE XVI

Christmas at the Ranch 1955.
Lady Bird, Luci, LBJ, Lynda and
Laddie. Courtesy LBJ Library,
55-12-10.



PLATE XVII

Christmas at the Ranch, December 25, 1955.
The Johnson Family Group, Courtesy LBJ Library
AK-55-C.



PLATE XVIII

December 25, 1955. The family at Christmas
Dinner, LBJ Library, 55-12-24-AK.



PLATE XIX

Christmas 1957. Family Group. This was Mrs. Rebekah Baines Johnson's last Christmas with her son. She died on September 13, 1958. Courtesy LBJ Library, AK-55C.

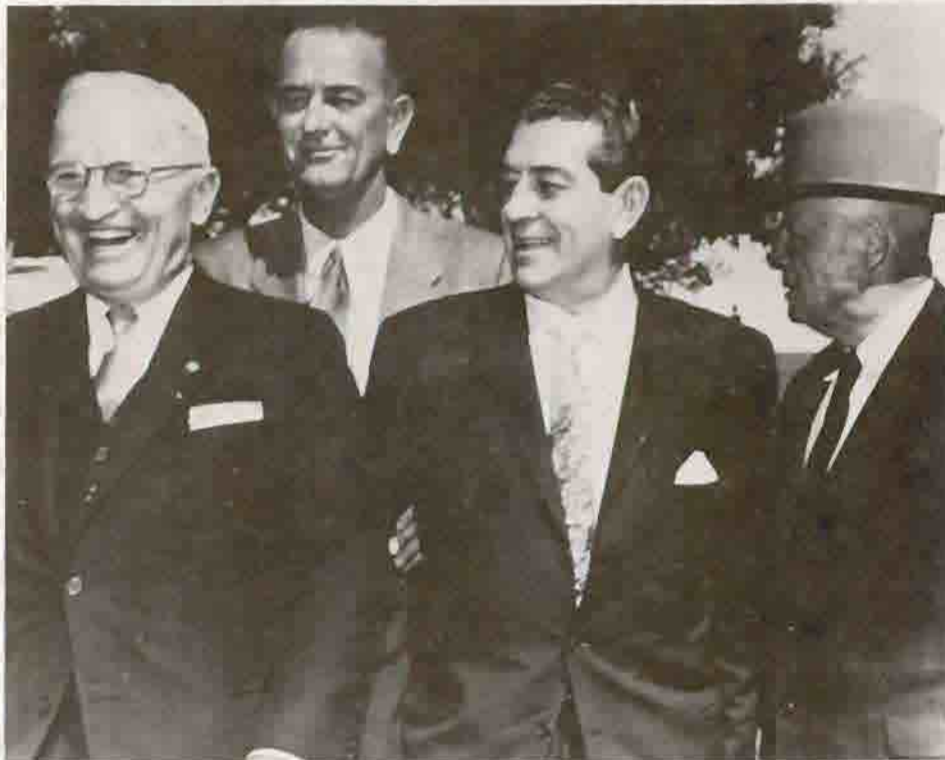


PLATE XX

October 18, 1959. Lyndon B. Johnson welcomes President Adolfo Lopez Mateos, former President Truman, and Speaker Sam Rayburn to a Hill Country Gala. Courtesy LBJ Library, 59-10-72C.



PLATE XXI

November 16, 1960. President-elect John F. Kennedy visits the Ranch to discuss with LBJ plans for their administration. The first hanger press conference. Courtesy LBJ Library, 60-11-321-AK.



PLATE XXII

April 16, 1961. West German Chancellor Adenauer
his daughter Mrs. Libeth Werhahn, and
Vice President and Mrs. Johnson at the Ranch.
Courtesy LBJ Library AK-103-10.



PLATE XXIII

April 16, 1961. Chancellor Adenauer and
Vice President Johnson pass through
the barbecue line. Courtesy LBJ
Library, AK-98-6-(2).

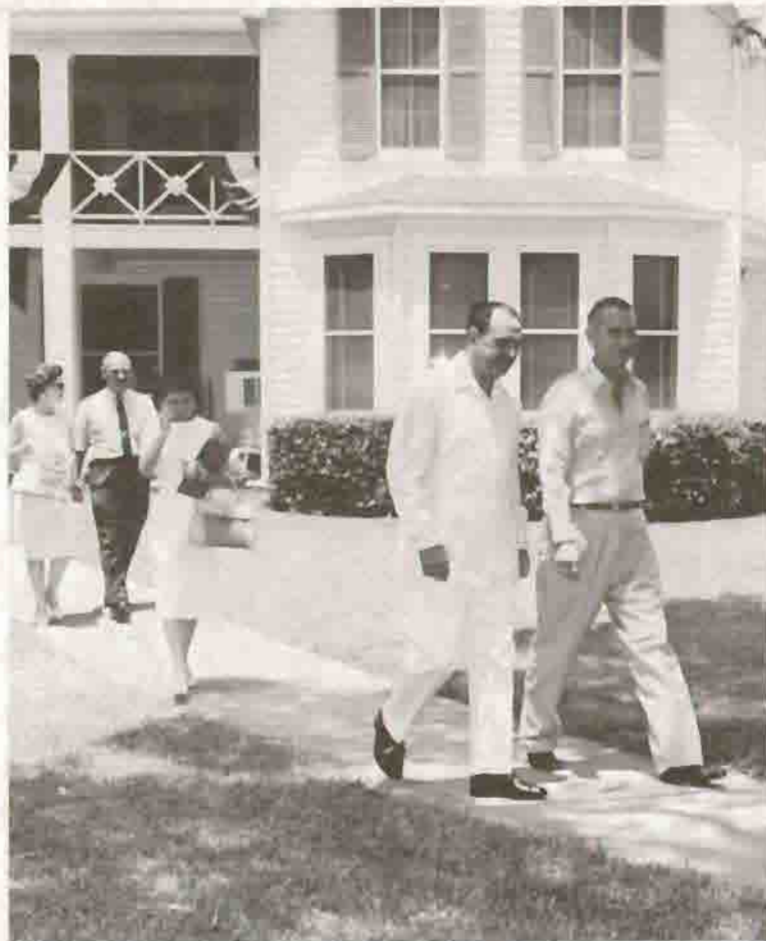


PLATE XXIV

July 16, 1961. President Ayub Khan
of Pakistan and Vice President
Johnson start for the barbecue.
Courtesy LBJ Library, AK-114-S.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Primary Sources

Manuscript Materials

Lyndon B. Johnson Library,
Austin, Texas.

"Lyndon Johnson's Journal of Mission to Southwest Pacific, May-July
1942."

Pre-Presidential Diary.

Rebekah Baines Johnson Papers.

Published

1. Biographies and Autobiographies

Carpenter, Liz. Ruffles and Flourishes. New York, 1970.

Johnson, Sam Houston. My Brother Lyndon. New York, 1969.

Mooney, Booth. The Lyndon Johnson Story. New York, 1964.

Montgomery, Ruth. Mrs. LBJ. New York, 1965.

Provence, Harry. Lyndon B. Johnson. New York, 1965.

2. Genealogies

Johnson, Rebekah Baines. A Family Album. New York, 1965.

3. Articles in Periodicals

Carpenter, Leslie E. "The Whip from Texas." Colliers. Feb. 17, 1951.

Healy, Paul F. "The Frenetic Gentleman from Texas." The Saturday
Evening Post. May 19, 1951.

4. Secondary Sources

Bain, Richard. Convention Decisions and Voling Records. Washington, 1960.

White, William L. Queens Die Proudly. New York, 1943.

Taped Interviews

Lyndon B. Johnson Library. Austin, Texas.

Nichols, Dorothy with Joe Frantz. Sept. 24, 1968.

Payne, Harvey O., with Paul Bolton. Oct. 15, 1968.

Pryor, Cactus with Paul Bolton. Sept. 10, 1968.

Rather, Mary with Michael L. Gillette. Dec. 10, 1974.

Williams, Eugene & Helen Williams with Michael L. Gillette, Oct. 27, 1974.

Lyndon B. Johnson National Historical Park. Johnson City, Texas.

Boozar, Mrs. Yolanda with Konrad Kelley & Edwin C. Bearss. June 7, 1978.

Carpenter, Liz with Konrad Kelley & Edwin C. Bearss. June 7, 1978.

Leonard, Mrs. Jimmy with Blair Hubbard & Edwin C. Bearss. March 13, 1973.

Malechek, Mrs. Jewel, with Konrad Kelley & Edwin C. Bearss. June 9, 1978.

Nugent, Luci Johnson with Konrad Kelley & Edwin C. Bearss. June 8, 1978.

Rather, Miss Mary with Konrad Kelley & Edwin C. Bearss. June 8, 1978.

Personal Interviews

Cox, Ohlen with Edwin C. Bearss. Jan. 18, 1973.

Gliddon, Stella with Edwin C. Bearss. July 19, 1978.

Johnson, Lyndon B. with Edwin C. Bearss. Sept. 5, 1972.

Johnson, Lyndon B. with George B. Hartzog & Edwin C. Bearss. Sept. 5, 1972.

Johnson, Sam Houston and Edwin C. Bearss. Dec. 2, 1972.

Johnson, Sam Houston with Edwin C. Bearss. March 15, 1973.

Johnson, Sam Houston with Edwin C. Bearss. July 17, 1978.

Tanner, J. O., with Edwin C. Bearss. Jan. 26, 1973.

Newspapers

Fredericksburg Standard
(Fredericksburg, Tex.)

Radio-Post (Fredericksburg, Tex.)

Record-Courier (Johnson City)

As the Nation's principal conservation agency, the Department of the Interior has basic responsibilities to protect and conserve our land and water, energy and minerals, fish and wildlife, parks and recreation areas, and to ensure the wise use of all these resources. The department also has major responsibility for American Indian reservation communities and for people who live in island territories under U.S. administration.

Publication services were provided by the graphics staff at the Denver Service Center. NPS D-11

